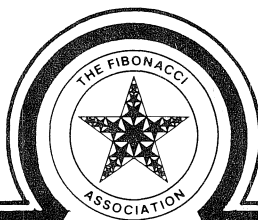


The Fibonacci Quarterly

THE OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION

VOLUME 19
NUMBER 1



FEBRUARY
1981

CONTENTS

| | | |
|---|--|----|
| Newton's Method and Ratios of Fibonacci Numbers | <i>John Gill & Gary Miller</i> | 1 |
| A Characterization of the Fundamental Solutions to Pell's Equation $u^2 - Dv^2 = C$ | <i>M.J. DeLeon</i> | 4 |
| Structural Issues for Hyperperfect Numbers | <i>Daniel Minoli</i> | 6 |
| On Reciprocal Series Related to Fibonacci Numbers with Subscripts in Arithmetic Progression | <i>Robert P. Backstrom</i> | 14 |
| On the Equation $\sigma(m)\sigma(n) = m + n^2$ | <i>Masao Kishore</i> | 21 |
| A Special m th-Order Recurrence Relation | <i>Leonard E. Fuller</i> | 24 |
| Fibonacci Numbers in Tree Counts for Maximal Outerplanar and Related Graphs | <i>D.W. Bange, A.E. Barkauskas, & P.J. Slater</i> | 28 |
| A New Angle on the Geometry of the Fibonacci Numbers | <i>Duane W. DeTemple</i> | 35 |
| Fibonacci and Lucas Cubes | <i>J.C. Lagarias & D.P. Weisser</i> | 39 |
| The Number of States in a Class of Serial Queueing Systems | <i>Michael J. Magazine</i> | 43 |
| The Determination of All Decadic Kaprekar Constants | <i>G.D. Prichett, A.L. Ludington, & J.F. Lapenta</i> | 45 |
| The Decimal Expansion of $1/89$ and Related Results | <i>C.T. Long</i> | 53 |
| A Root Property of a Psi-Type Equation | <i>Furio Alberti</i> | 56 |
| Recognition Algorithms for Fibonacci Numbers | <i>Dennis C. Smolarski & Leonard F. Klosinski</i> | 57 |
| On Some Conjectures of Gould on the Parities of the Binomial Coefficients | <i>Robert S. Garfinkel & Stanley M. Selkow</i> | 61 |
| Solutions for General Recurrence Relations | <i>Leonard E. Fuller</i> | 64 |
| On Generating Functions and Double Series Expansions | <i>M.E. Cohen & H.S. Sun</i> | 69 |
| An Equivalent Form of Benford's Law | <i>James V. Peters</i> | 74 |
| A New Type Magic Latin 3-Cube of Order Ten | <i>J. Arkin & K. Singh</i> | 76 |
| Complex Fibonacci Numbers | <i>C.J. Harman</i> | 82 |
| Elementary Problems and Solutions | <i>Edited by A.P. Hillman</i> | 87 |
| Advanced Problems and Solutions | <i>Edited by Raymond E. Whitney</i> | 93 |

The Fibonacci Quarterly

Founded in 1963 by Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. (1921-1980),
Br. Alfred Brousseau, and I.D. Ruggles

THE OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION
DEVOTED TO THE STUDY
OF INTEGERS WITH SPECIAL PROPERTIES

EDITOR

Gerald E. Bergum

BOARD OF DIRECTORS

G.L. Alexanderson (President), Leonard Klosinski (Vice-President), Marjorie Johnson (Secretary), Dave Logothetti (Treasurer), Richard Vine (Subscription Manager), Hugh Edgar and Robert Giuli.

ASSISTANT EDITORS

Maxey Brooke, Paul F. Byrd, Leonard Carlitz, H.W. Gould, A.P. Hillman, A.F. Horadam, David A. Klarner, Calvin T. Long, D.W. Robinson, M.N.S. Swamy, D.E. Thoro, and Charles R. Wall.

EDITORIAL POLICY

The principal purpose of *The Fibonacci Quarterly* is to serve as a focal point for widespread interest in the Fibonacci and related numbers, especially with respect to new results, research proposals, and challenging problems.

The *Quarterly* seeks articles that are intelligible yet stimulating to its readers, most of whom are university teachers and students. These articles should be lively and well motivated, with innovative ideas that develop enthusiasm for number sequences or the exploration of number facts.

Articles should be submitted in the format of the current issues of the *Quarterly*. They should be typewritten or reproduced typewritten copies, double space with wide margins and on only one side of the paper. Articles should be no longer than twenty-five pages. The full name and address of the author must appear at the beginning of the paper directly under the title. Illustrations should be carefully drawn in India ink on separate sheets of bond paper or vellum, approximately twice the size they are to appear in the *Quarterly*. Authors who pay page charges will receive two free copies of the issue in which their article appears.

Two copies of the manuscript should be submitted to GERALD E. BERGUM, DEPARTMENT OF MATHEMATICS, SOUTH DAKOTA STATE UNIVERSITY, BROOKINGS, SD 57007. The author is encouraged to keep a copy for his own file as protection against loss.

Address all subscription correspondence, including notification of address changes, to SUBSCRIPTION MANAGER, THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION, UNIVERSITY OF SANTA CLARA, SANTA CLARA, CA 95053.

Annual domestic Fibonacci Association membership dues, which include a subscription to *The Fibonacci Quarterly*, are \$18 for Regular Membership, \$25 for Sustaining Membership I, \$37 for Sustaining Membership II, and \$42 for Institutional Membership; foreign rates, which are based on international mailing rates, are currently \$8 higher than domestic rates. *The Quarterly* is published each February, April, October, and December.

All back issues of *The Fibonacci Quarterly* are available in microfilm or hard copy format from UNIVERSITY MICROFILMS INTERNATIONAL, P.O. Box 1307, ANN ARBOR, MI 48106.

NEWTON'S METHOD AND RATIOS OF FIBONACCI NUMBERS

JOHN GILL

Electrical Engineering Dept., Stanford University, Stanford, CA 94305

GARY MILLER

Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, MA 02139

ABSTRACT

The sequence $\{F_{n+1}/F_n\}$ of ratios of consecutive Fibonacci numbers converges to the golden mean $\varphi = \frac{1}{2}(1 + \sqrt{5})$, the positive root of $x^2 - x - 1 = 0$. Newton's method for the equation $x^2 - x - 1 = 0$ with initial approximation 1 produces the subsequence $\{F_{2^n+1}/F_{2^n}\}$ of Fibonacci ratios. The secant method for this equation with initial approximations 1 and 2 produces the subsequence $\{F_{F_n+1}/F_{F_n}\}$. These results generalize to quadratic equations with roots of unequal magnitudes.

It is well known that the ratios of successive Fibonacci numbers converge to the golden mean. We recall that the Fibonacci numbers $\{F_n\}$ are defined by the recurrence $F_n = F_{n-1} + F_{n-2}$ with $F_0 = 0$ and $F_1 = 1$.* The golden mean, $\varphi = \frac{1}{2}(1 + \sqrt{5}) \approx 1.618$, is the positive solution of the equation $x^2 - x - 1 = 0$.

The ratios $\{F_{n+1}/F_n\}$ of consecutive Fibonacci numbers are a sequence of rational numbers converging to φ linearly; that is, the number of digits of F_{n+1}/F_n which agree with φ is approximately a linear function of n . In fact, there are constants $\alpha, \beta > 0$ and $\varepsilon < 1$ such that $\alpha\varepsilon^n < |F_{n+1}/F_n - \varphi| < \beta\varepsilon^n$.

We can obtain sequences of rational numbers converging more rapidly to φ by using procedures of numerical analysis for approximating solutions of the equation $x^2 - x - 1 = 0$. Two common methods for solving an equation $f(x) = 0$ numerically are Newton's method and the secant method (*regula falsi*) [1, 3]. Each method generates a sequence $\{x_n\}$ converging to a solution of $f(x) = 0$. For Newton's method,

$$(1) \quad x_n = \text{NEWTON}(x_{n-1}) = x_{n-1} - \frac{f(x_{n-1})}{f'(x_{n-1})}.$$

The secant method is obtained from Newton's method by replacing $f'(x_{n-1})$ by a difference quotient:

$$(2) \quad \begin{aligned} x_n = \text{SECANT}(x_{n-1}, x_{n-2}) &= x_{n-1} - \frac{f(x_{n-1})(x_{n-1} - x_{n-2})}{f(x_{n-1}) - f(x_{n-2})} \\ &= \frac{x_{n-2}f(x_{n-1}) - x_{n-1}f(x_{n-2})}{f(x_{n-1}) - f(x_{n-2})}. \end{aligned}$$

[The first expression for $\text{SECANT}(x_{n-1}, x_{n-2})$ is more useful for numerical calculations, while the second expression reveals the symmetric roles of x_{n-1} and x_{n-2} .] The familiar geometric interpretations of Newton's method and the secant method are given in Figure 1.

Newton's method requires an initial approximation x_0 ; the secant method requires two approximations x_0 and x_1 . If the initial values are sufficiently close to a solution ξ of $f(x) = 0$, then the sequences $\{x_n\}$ defined by either method converge to ξ . Suppose that $f'(\xi) \neq 0$; that is, ξ is a simple zero of f . Then, the convergence of Newton's method is quadratic [1]: the number of correct digits of x_n is about twice that of x_{n-1} , since $|x_n - \xi| \approx \alpha|x_{n-1} - \xi|^2$

*For future reference, we note the first few Fibonacci numbers: 0, 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 8, 13, 21, 34, 55, 89, 144, 233, 377, 610, 987, 1597.

for some $\alpha > 0$. Similarly, the order of convergence of the secant method is $\varphi \approx 1.618$, since $|x_n - \xi| \approx \alpha |x_{n-1} - \xi|^\varphi$ for some $\alpha > 0$ [3].

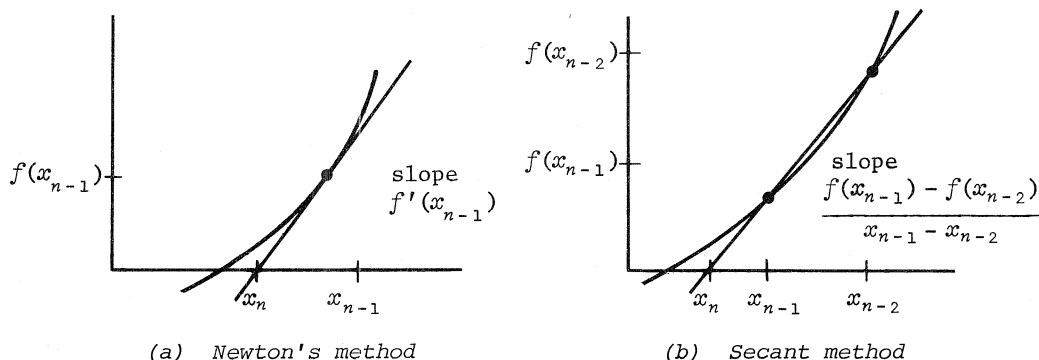


Fig. 1. Geometric interpretations of Newton's method and secant method

Both these methods applied to the equation $x^2 - x - 1 = 0$ yield sequences converging to φ more rapidly than $\{F_{n+1}/F_n\}$. For this equation, we calculate easily that

$$(3) \quad \text{NEWTON}(x_{n-1}) = \frac{x_{n-1}^2 + 1}{2x_{n-1} - 1} \quad \text{and} \quad \text{SECANT}(x_{n-1}, x_{n-2}) = \frac{x_{n-1}x_{n-2} + 1}{x_{n-1} + x_{n-2} - 1}.$$

For initial approximations to φ , it is natural to choose Fibonacci ratios. For example, with $x_0 = 1$, Newton's method produces the sequence,

$$1, 2/1, 5/3, 34/21, 1597/987, \dots,$$

which we recognize (see note on page 1) as a subsequence of Fibonacci ratios. From a few more sample calculations [e.g.,

$$\text{NEWTON}(3/2) = 13/8 \quad \text{or} \quad \text{NEWTON}(8/5) = 89/55]$$

we infer the identity:

$$(4) \quad \text{NEWTON}(F_{n+1}/F_n) = F_{2n+1}/F_{2n}.$$

The sequence $\{x_n\}$ generated by Newton's method with $x_0 = 1$ is defined by $x_n = F_{2^{n+1}}/F_{2^n}$. Now it is obvious that the convergence of $\{x_n\}$ is quadratic, since there are constants $\alpha, \beta > 0$ and $\varepsilon < 1$ such that $\alpha\varepsilon^{2^n} < |x_n - \varphi| < \beta\varepsilon^{2^n}$.

We can similarly apply the secant method with Fibonacci ratios as initial approximations. From examples such as

$$\text{SECANT}(1, 2) = 3/2, \text{SECANT}(2, 3/2) = 8/5, \text{and } \text{SECANT}(3/2, 8/5) = 34/21,$$

we infer the general rule:

$$(5) \quad \text{SECANT}(F_{m+1}/F_m, F_{n+1}/F_n) = F_{m+n+1}/F_{m+n}.$$

In particular, if $x_1 = 1$ and $x_2 = 2$, then the sequence $\{x_n\}$ generated by the secant method is given by $x_n = F_{F_{n+1}}/F_{F_n}$. Since F_n is asymptotic to $\varphi^n/\sqrt{5}$, there are constants $\alpha, \beta > 0$ and $\varepsilon < 1$ such that $\alpha\varepsilon^{2^n} < |x_n - \varphi| < \beta\varepsilon^{2^n}$, which dramatically illustrates that the order of convergence of the secant method is φ .

Equations (4) and (5) are interesting because they imply that the sequences of rational approximations to φ produced by Newton's method and by the secant method are simple subsequences of Fibonacci ratios.

We now verify (4) and (5). In fact, these identities are valid in general for any sequence $\{u_n\}$ defined by a second-order linear difference equation with $u_0 = 0$ and $u_1 = 1$, provided the sequence $\{u_{n+1}/u_n\}$ is convergent.

Lemma: Let $\{u_n\}$ be defined by $au_n + bu_{n-1} + cu_{n-2} = 0$ with $u_0 = 0$ and $u_1 = 1$. Then $au_{m+1}u_{n+1} - cu_mu_n = au_{m+n+1}$ for all $m, n \geq 0$.

Proof: By induction on n . For $n = 0$, the lemma holds for all m since

$$au_{m+1}u_1 - cu_mu_0 = au_{m+1}.$$

Now assume that for $n - 1$ the lemma is true for all m . Then

$$\begin{aligned} au_{m+1}u_{n+1} - cu_mu_n &= (-bu_n - cu_{n-1})u_{m+1} + (au_{m+2} + bu_{m+1})u_n \\ &= au_{m+2}u_n - cu_{m+1}u_{n-1} \\ &= au_{(m+1)+(n-1)+1} \\ &= au_{m+n+1}. \quad \square \end{aligned}$$

The lemma generalizes the Fibonacci identity [2]:

$$F_{m+1}F_{n+1} + F_mF_n = F_{m+n+1}.$$

Suppose that $ax^2 + bx + c$ has distinct zeros λ_1 and λ_2 . Any sequence $\{u_n\}$ satisfying the recurrence $au_n + bu_{n-1} + cu_{n-2} = 0$ is of the form

$$u_n = k_1\lambda_1^n + k_2\lambda_2^n,$$

where k_1 and k_2 are constants determined by the initial values u_0 and u_1 . If $|\lambda_1| > |\lambda_2|$ and $k_1 \neq 0$, then u_n is asymptotic to $k_1\lambda_1^n$, and so $\{u_{n+1}/u_n\}$ converges linearly to λ_1 . We now show that if $u_0 = 0$ and $u_1 = 1$, then Newton's method and the secant method, starting with ratios from $\{u_{n+1}/u_n\}$, generate subsequences of $\{u_{n+1}/u_n\}$.

Theorem: Let $\{u_n\}$ be defined by $au_n + bu_{n-1} + cu_{n-2} = 0$ with $u_0 = 0$ and $u_1 = 1$. If the characteristic polynomial $f(x) = ax^2 + bx + c$ has zeros λ_1 and λ_2 with $|\lambda_1| > |\lambda_2|$, then:

- (i) $u_n \neq 0$ for all $n > 0$;
- (ii) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} u_{n+1}/u_n = \lambda_1$;
- (iii) $\text{NEWTON}(u_{n+1}/u_n) = u_{2n+1}/u_{2n}$;
- (iv) $\text{SECANT}(u_{m+1}/u_m, u_{n+1}/u_n) = u_{m+n+1}/u_{m+n}$.

Proof:

(i) It is easily verified that $u_n = k(\lambda_1^n - \lambda_2^n)$, where $k = \pm a/\sqrt{b^2 - 4ac}$. (The sign of k depends on the signs of a and b .) Since $|\lambda_1| > |\lambda_2|$, if $n > 0$, then $|\lambda_1^n| > |\lambda_2^n|$ and, therefore, $u_n \neq 0$.

(ii) We note, as an aside, that the sequence $\{u_{n+1}/u_n\}$ satisfies the first-order recurrence $x_n = -(bx_{n-1} + c)/ax_{n-1}$. To verify (ii):

$$\frac{u_{n+1}}{u_n} = \frac{k(\lambda_1^{n+1} - \lambda_2^{n+1})}{k(\lambda_1^n - \lambda_2^n)} = \lambda_1 \frac{1 - (\lambda_1/\lambda_2)^{n+1}}{1 - (\lambda_1/\lambda_2)^n} \rightarrow \lambda_1 \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty, \text{ since } |\lambda_1/\lambda_2| < 1.$$

(iii) For the equation $ax^2 + bx + c = 0$, Newton's method and the secant method are given by

$$(6) \quad \text{NEWTON}(x_{n-1}) = \frac{ax_{n-1}^2 - c}{2ax_{n-1} + b} \quad \text{and} \quad \text{SECANT}(x_{n-1}, x_{n-2}) = \frac{ax_{n-1}x_{n-2} - c}{a(x_{n-1} + x_{n-2}) + b}.$$

Therefore, $\text{NEWTON}(x_{n-1}) = \text{SECANT}(x_{n-1}, x_{n-1})$, and so (iii) follows from (iv). Note that this identity holds for any polynomial equation $f(x) = 0$.

(iv) By (6),

$$\begin{aligned} \text{SECANT}(u_{m+1}/u_m, u_{n+1}/u_n) &= \frac{a(u_{m+1}/u_m)(u_{n+1}/u_n) - c}{a(u_{m+1}/u_m + u_{n+1}/u_n) + b} \\ &= \frac{au_{m+1}u_{n+1} - cu_mu_n}{au_{m+1}u_n + au_mu_{n+1} + bu_mu_n} \\ &= \frac{au_{m+1}u_{n+1} - cu_mu_n}{au_{m+1}u_n - cu_mu_{n-1}} \\ &= au_{m+n+1}/au_{m+n} \quad (\text{by the lemma}) \\ &= u_{m+n+1}/u_{m+n} \cdot \square \end{aligned}$$

Remarks:

1. The theorem does not generalize to polynomials of degree higher than 2.
2. Not only do the ratios of the consecutive Fibonacci numbers converge to φ , they are the "best" rational approximation to φ ; i.e., if $n > 1$, $0 < F \leq F_n$ and $P/F \neq F_{n+1}/F_n$, then $|F_{n+1}/F_n - \varphi| < |P/F - \varphi|$ by [4]. Since Newton's method and the secant method produce subsequences of Fibonacci ratios, they also produce the best rational approximation to φ .

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The above results were discovered in response to a question posed by Ernst Specker. This research was supported by the National Science Foundation under Grant GK-43121 at Stanford University and by the Forschungsinstitut für Mathematik, Eidgenössische Technische Hochschule, Zürich.

REFERENCES

1. P. Henrici. *Elements of Numerical Analysis*. New York: Wiley, 1964.
2. D. E. Knuth. *The Art of Computer Programming*. Vol. I: *Fundamental Algorithms*. Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1968.
3. A. Ralston. *A First Course in Numerical Analysis*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1965.
4. G. H. Hardy & E. M. Wright. *An Introduction to the Theory of Numbers*, p. 151, Theorem 181. London: Oxford, 1968.

A CHARACTERIZATION OF THE FUNDAMENTAL SOLUTIONS TO
PELL'S EQUATION $u^2 - Dv^2 = C$

M. J. DeLEON

Florida Atlantic University, Boca Raton, FL 33432

Due to a confusion originating with Euler, the diophantine equation

$$(1) \quad u^2 - Dv^2 = C,$$

where D is a positive integer that is not a perfect square and C is a nonzero integer, is usually called *Pell's equation*. In a previous article [1, Theorem 2], the following theorem was proved.

Theorem 1: Let $x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D}$ be the fundamental solution to $x^2 - Dy^2 = 1$. If $k =$

$(y_1)/(x_1 - 1)$ and if $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$ is a fundamental solution to $u^2 - Dv^2 = -N$, where $N > 0$, then $v_0 = |v_0| \geq k|u_0|$. If $k = (Dy_1)/(x_1 - 1)$ and if $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$ is a fundamental solution to $u^2 - Dv^2 = N$, where $N > 1$, then $u_0 = |u_0| \geq k|v_0|$.

In Theorem 4, we shall prove the converse of this result. In the sequel, the definition of a fundamental solution to Eq. (1) given in [1] will be used. This definition differs from the one in [2, p. 205] only when $v_0 < 0$. In this case, if the fundamental solution given in [1] is denoted by $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$, then the one given by the definition in [2] would be $-(u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D})$. We shall need to recall Remark A of [1] and to add to the three statements of this remark the statement:

- (iv) If $C \leq 1$ and $-u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$ is in K then $u_0 \geq 0$. If $C \geq 1$ and $u_0 - v_0\sqrt{D}$ is in K then $v_0 \geq 0$.

Also, we shall need the following result (see [1, Theorem 5]).

Theorem 2: If $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is a solution in nonnegative integers to the diophantine equation $u^2 - Dv^2 = C$, where $C \neq 1$, then there exists a nonnegative integer n such that $u + v\sqrt{D} = (u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D})(x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D})^n$ where $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$ is the fundamental solution to the class of solutions of $u^2 - Dv^2 = C$ to which $u + v\sqrt{D}$ belongs and $x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D}$ is the fundamental solution to $x^2 - Dy^2 = 1$.

We now need to prove a lemma and a simple consequence of this lemma.

Lemma 3: Let $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$ be a fundamental solution to a class of solutions to $u^2 - Dv^2 = C$. If, for $n \geq 1$, we let $u_n + v_n\sqrt{D} = (u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D})(x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D})^n$, then $u_n > 0$ and $v_n > 0$ for $n \geq 1$.

Proof: Since

$$u_1 + v_1\sqrt{D} = (u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D})(x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D}) = (u_0x_1 + Dv_0y_1) + (u_0y_1 + v_0x_1)\sqrt{D},$$

we have that $u_1 = u_0x_1 + Dv_0y_1$ and $v_1 = u_0y_1 + v_0x_1$.

We now begin an induction proof of Lemma 3. First, suppose $u_0^2 - Dv_0^2 = C$, where $C < 0$. This implies, by Remark A [1], $v_0 > 0$. Hence $u_0 \geq 0$ implies $u_1 > u_0x_1 \geq u_0 \geq 0$ and $v_1 > v_0 > 0$. Thus suppose $u_0 < 0$. By Theorem 1,

$$v_0 \geq \frac{-u_0y_1}{x_1 - 1} = \frac{-u_0(x_1 + 1)}{Dy_1}.$$

Whence, $u_1 = u_0x_1 + Dv_0y_1 \geq -u_0 > 0$ and $v_1 = u_0y_1 + v_0x_1 \geq v_0 > 0$. Therefore, for $C < 0$, $u_1 > 0$ and $v_1 > 0$.

Next, suppose $u_0^2 - Dv_0^2 = C$, where $C > 0$. This implies $u_0 > 0$. Thus $v_0 \geq 0$ implies $u_1 > u_0 > 0$ and $v_1 > v_0 \geq 0$. Thus suppose $v_0 < 0$. Hence $C > 1$, so by Theorem 1,

$$u_0 \geq \frac{-Dv_0y_1}{x_1 - 1} = \frac{-v_0(x_1 + 1)}{y_1}.$$

Whence, $u_1 \geq u_0 > 0$ and $v_1 \geq -v_0 > 0$. This completes the proof of Lemma 3 for $n = 1$.

Since

$$\begin{aligned} (2) \quad (u_{n+1} + v_{n+1}\sqrt{D}) &= (u_n + v_n\sqrt{D})(x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D}) \\ &= (u_nx_1 + Dv_ny_1) + (x_1v_n + y_1u_n)\sqrt{D}, \end{aligned}$$

the assumption $u_n > 0$ and $v_n > 0$ implies $u_{n+1} > 0$ and $v_{n+1} > 0$.

Corollary: With u_0, v_0, u_n , and v_n defined as in Lemma 3, we have $u_{n+1} > u_n$ and $v_{n+1} > v_n$ for $n \geq 0$.

Proof: In the proof of Lemma 3, it was shown that $v_1 \geq v_0$ and that, in addition, for $u_0 \geq 0$ or $C > 0$ we actually have $v_1 > v_0$. For the case $u_0 < 0$ and $C < 0$, it follows from the proof of Lemma 3 that $v_1 = v_0$ implies $u_1 = -u_0$. So

$-u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D} = u_1 + v_1\sqrt{D}$ belongs to the same class of solutions to $u^2 - Dv^2 = C$ as $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$. Since we are assuming $u_0 < 0$, this contradicts (iv) of Remark A [1]. Hence, even in this case, $v_1 > v_0$. In a similar manner, it is seen that we always have $u_1 > u_0$. Since $u_n > 0$ and $v_n > 0$ for $n \geq 1$, (2) implies that $u_{n+1} > u_n$ and $v_{n+1} > v_n$ for $n \geq 1$.

Theorem 4: If $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is a solution in nonnegative integers to $u^2 - Dv^2 = -N$, where $N \geq 1$, and if $v \geq ku$, where $k = (y_1)/(x_1 - 1)$, then $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is the fundamental solution of a class of solutions to $u^2 - Dv^2 = -N$. If $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is a solution in nonnegative integers to $u^2 - Dv^2 = N$, where $N > 1$, and if $u \geq kv$, where $k = (Dy_1)/(x_1 - 1)$, then $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is the fundamental solution of a class of solutions to $u^2 - Dv^2 = N$.

Proof: By Theorem 2, $u + v\sqrt{D} = (u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D})(x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D})^n = u_n + v_n\sqrt{D}$, where n is a nonnegative integer and $u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$ is a fundamental solution to $u^2 - Dv^2 = \pm N$. We shall prove $u + v\sqrt{D} = u_0 + v_0\sqrt{D}$. So assume $n \geq 1$. Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} u_n + v_n\sqrt{D} &= (u_{n-1} + v_{n-1}\sqrt{D})(x_1 + y_1\sqrt{D}) \\ &= (x_1u_{n-1} + Dy_1v_{n-1}) + (x_1v_{n-1} + y_1u_{n-1})\sqrt{D}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus $u_{n-1} = x_1u_n - Dy_1v_n$ and $v_{n-1} = -y_1u_n + x_1v_n$.

First, suppose $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is a solution to $u^2 - Dv^2 = -N$. We know that

$$v = v_n \geq ku_n = \frac{y_1u_n}{x_1 - 1}.$$

Hence

$$v_{n-1} = -y_1u_n + x_1v_n = (x_1 - 1)v_n - y_1u_n + v_n \geq v_n.$$

But by the corollary to Lemma 3, $v_{n-1} < v_n$ for $n \geq 1$. Thus $n = 0$ and the proof is complete for the case $u^2 - Dv^2 = -N$.

Now, suppose $u + v\sqrt{D}$ is a solution to $u^2 - Dv^2 = N$. We know that

$$u_n \geq kv_n = \frac{Dy_1v_n}{x_1 - 1}.$$

(Please turn to page 92)

STRUCTURAL ISSUES FOR HYPERPERFECT NUMBERS

DANIEL MINOLI

Bell Laboratories, Holmdel, NH 07733

ABSTRACT

An integer m is said to be n -hyperperfect if $m = 1 + n[\sigma(m) - m - 1]$. These numbers are a natural extension of the perfect numbers, and as such share remarkably similar properties. In this paper we investigate sufficient forms for hyperperfect numbers.

1. INTRODUCTION

Integers having "some type of perfection" have received considerable attention in the past few years. The most well-known cases are: perfect numbers ([1], [12], [13], [14], [15]); multiperfect numbers ([1]); quasiperfect numbers ([2]); almost perfect numbers ([3], [4], [5]); semiperfect numbers ([16], [17]);

and unitary perfect numbers ([11]). The related issue of amicable, unitary amicable, quasiamicable, and sociable numbers ([8], [10], [11], [9], [6], [7]) has also been investigated extensively.

The intent of these variations of the classical definition appears to have been the desire to obtain a set of numbers, of nontrivial cardinality, whose elements have properties resembling those of the perfect case. However, none of the existing definitions generates a rich theory and a solution set having structural character emulating the perfect numbers; either such sets are empty, or their euclidean distance from zero is greater than some very large number, or no particularly unique prime decomposition form for the set elements can be shown to exist.

This is in contrast with the abundance (cardinally speaking) and the crystallized form of the n -hyperperfect numbers (n -HP) first introduced in [18]. These numbers are a natural extension of the perfect case, and, as such, share remarkably similar properties, as described below.

In this paper we investigate sufficient forms for the hyperperfect numbers. The necessity of these forms, though highly corroborated by empirical evidence, remains to be established for many cases.

2. BASIC THEORY

Definition 1:

- m is n -HP iff $m = 1 + n[\sigma(m) - m - 1]$, m and n positive integers.
- $M_n = \{m | m \text{ is } n\text{-HP}\}$.
- Let $m = p_1^{\alpha_1} p_2^{\alpha_2} \dots p_i^{\alpha_i} \dots p_j^{\alpha_j} p_{j+1}^k$ be n -HP and be in canonical form
 $(p_1 < p_2 < \dots < p_j < p_{j+1})$.
 Then $\rho(m) = \{p_1, p_2, \dots, p_{j-1}, p_j\}$ are the roots of m [if $m = p_1$, $\rho(m) = \emptyset$].
- $d_1(m) = |\rho(m)| = j$, $d_2(m) = k$.
- ${}_nM_{h,L} = \{m | m \text{ is } n\text{-HP}, d_1(m) = h, d_2(m) = L\}$.

Note that for $n = 1$ the perfect numbers are recaptured. Clearly one has

$$M_n = \left[\bigcup_L {}_nM_{0,L} \right] \cup \left[{}_nM_{1,1} \right] \cup \left[\bigcup_{h=2} {}_nM_{h,1} \right] \cup \left[\bigcup_{h=1} \bigcup_{L=2} {}_nM_{h,L} \right].$$

Definition 2:

- If $m \in \bigcup_L {}_nM_{0,L}$ we say that m is a *Sublinear HP*.
- If $m \in {}_nM_{1,1}$ we say that m is a *Linear HP*.
- If $m \in \bigcup_{h=2} {}_nM_{h,1}$ we say that m is a *Superlinear HP*.
- If $m \in \bigcup_{h=1} \bigcup_{L=2} {}_nM_{h,L}$ we say that m is a *Nonlinear HP*.

It has already been shown [18] that

Proposition 1: There are no Sublinear n -HPs.

Table 1 below shows the n -HP numbers less than 1,500,000. In each case, m is a Linear HP. We thus give an exhaustive theory for Linear HPs. Superlinear and Nonlinear results will be presented elsewhere; however, it appears that the

only n -HP are *Linear* n -HP. In fact, several nonlinear forms have been shown to be impossible.

Table 1. n -HP up to 1,500,000, $n \geq 2$

| n | m | Prime Decomposition for m | n | m | Prime Decomposition for m |
|-----|---------|-----------------------------------|-----|-----------|-----------------------------------|
| 2 | 21 | 3×7 | 2 | 176,661 | $3^5 \times 727$ |
| 6 | 301 | 7×43 | 31 | 214,273 | $47^2 \times 97$ |
| 3 | 325 | $5^2 \times 13$ | 168 | 250,321 | 193×1297 |
| 12 | 697 | 17×41 | 108 | 275,833 | 133×2441 |
| 18 | 1,333 | 31×43 | 66 | 296,341 | 67×4423 |
| 18 | 1,909 | 23×83 | 35 | 306,181 | $53^2 \times 109$ |
| 12 | 2,041 | 13×157 | 252 | 389,593 | 317×1229 |
| 2 | 2,133 | $3^3 \times 79$ | 18 | 486,877 | 79×6163 |
| 30 | 3,901 | 47×83 | 132 | 495,529 | 137×3617 |
| 11 | 10,693 | $17^2 \times 37$ | 342 | 524,413 | 499×1087 |
| 6 | 16,513 | $7^2 \times 337$ | 366 | 808,861 | 463×1747 |
| 2 | 19,521 | $3^4 \times 241$ | 390 | 1,005,421 | 479×2099 |
| 60 | 24,601 | 73×337 | 168 | 1,005,649 | 173×5813 |
| 48 | 26,977 | 53×509 | 348 | 1,055,833 | 401×2633 |
| 19 | 51,301 | $29^2 \times 61$ | 282 | 1,063,141 | 307×3463 |
| 132 | 96,361 | 173×557 | 498 | 1,232,053 | 691×1783 |
| 132 | 130,153 | 157×829 | 540 | 1,284,121 | 829×1549 |
| 10 | 159,841 | $11^2 \times 1321$ | 546 | 1,403,221 | 787×1783 |
| 192 | 163,201 | 293×557 | 59 | 1,433,701 | $89^2 \times 181$ |

3. LINEAR THEORY

The following basic theorem of Linear n -HP gives a sufficient form for a hyperperfect number.

Theorem 1: m is a Linear n -HP if and only if

$$p_2 = \frac{np_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n-1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n+1)p_1^{\alpha_1} + n}.$$

Proof: (\rightarrow) m is a Linear n -HP, if $m = p_1^{\alpha_1} p_2$; then

$$\sigma(m) = \frac{p_1^{\alpha_1+1} - 1}{p_1 - 1} (1 + p_2).$$

But m n -HP implies that $(n+1)m = (1-n) + n\sigma(m)$. Substituting for $\sigma(m)$ and solving for p_2 , we obtain the desired result. Note that p_2 must be a prime.

$$(\leftarrow) \text{ if } m = p_1^{\alpha_1} \frac{np_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n-1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n+1)p_1^{\alpha_1} + n}$$

where the second term is prime, then

$$\sigma(m) = \frac{p_1^{\alpha_1+1} - 1}{p_1 - 1} \left[1 + \frac{np_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n-1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n+1)p_1^{\alpha_1} + n} \right],$$

from which one sees that the condition for a *Linear n-HP* is satisfied. Q.E.D. We say that n is convolutionary if $n+1$ is prime p_1 .

Corollary 1: If n is convolutionary, a sufficient form for $m = p_1^{\alpha_1+1} p_2$ to be *Linear n-HP* is that for some α_1 , $p_2 = (n+1)^{\alpha_1} - n$ is a prime. In this case,

$$m = (n+1)^{\alpha_1+1} [(n+1)^{\alpha_1} - n].$$

Corollary 2: If $m = p_1 p_2$ is a *Linear n-HP*, then

$$p_2 = \frac{np_1^2 - (n-1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^2 - (n+1)p_1 + n}.$$

We would expect these n -HPs to be the most abundant, since they have the simplest structure. This appears to be so, as indicated by Table 1.

Corollary 3: If $m = p_1 p_2$ is a *Linear n-HP* with $p_1 = n+1$, then $p_2 = n^2 + n + 1$, so that

$$m = (n+1)(n^2 + n + 1).$$

In view of these corollaries, the following issues are of capital importance for cardinality considerations of *Linear n-HP*.

Definition 3:

- a. We say that $(n+1)^\alpha - n$, $\alpha = 1, 2, 3, \dots$, is a Legitimate Mersenne sequence rooted on n (n -LMS), if $n+1$ is a prime.
- b. Given an n -LMS, we say that $(n+1)^\alpha - n$ is an n th-order Mersenne prime (n -MP), if $(n+1)^\alpha - n$ is prime.

A 1-LMS is the well-known sequence $2^\alpha - 1$.

Question 1. Does there exist an n -MP for each n ?

Question 2. Do there exist infinitely many n -MP for each n ?

Question 3. Are there infinitely many primes of the form $n^2 + n + 1$, where $n+1$ is prime?

Extensive computer searches (not documented here) seem to indicate that the answer to these questions is affirmative.

Theorem 2: If m is a *Linear n-HP*, then $n+1 \leq p_1 \leq 2n-1$ if $n > 1$ and $p_1 \leq 2$ if $n = 1$.

Proof: It can be shown that if m is n -HP and $j|m$, then $j > n$. Thus, for a *Linear n-HP*, $p_1 > n$; equivalently, $p_1 \geq n+1$. Now, since

$$p_2 = p_1 \frac{np_1^{\alpha_1} - (n-1) - 1/p_1}{(p_1 - n - 1)p_1^{\alpha_1} + n},$$

we let

$$p_1 = n + 1 + \mu;$$

then,

$$p_2 = p_1 \frac{np_1^{\alpha_1} - (n-1) - 1/p_1}{\mu p_1^{\alpha_1} + n}.$$

(Note: $\mu = 0$ implies $p_1 = n + 1 < 2n$.) Since we want the second factor of this expression larger than 1, we must have $\mu < n$ or $n < p_1 \leq 2n$, from which we get $n + 1 \leq p_1 \leq 2n - 1$ if $n > 1$, for primality, and $1 < p_1 \leq 2$ if $n = 1$. Q.E.D.

Observe that the upper bound is necessary for a Linear n -HP, but not for a general n -HP.

Corollary 4: m is a Linear 1-HP iff it is of the form $m = 2^{t-1}(2^t - 1)$.

Proof: From Theorem 2, $p_1 = 2$. Now we can apply Corollary 1 to obtain the necessary part of this result. The sufficiency part follows from the definition.

4. BOUNDS FOR LINEAR n -HP

We now establish important bounds for Linear n -HP.

Proposition 2: Let m be Linear n -HP. Consider $p_2 = F(\alpha)$. The p_2 is monotonically increasing on α .

Proof: Omitted.

Proposition 3:

$$\lim_{\alpha \rightarrow \infty} p_2 = \begin{cases} \frac{np_1}{p_1 - n - 1} & p_1 \neq n + 1 \\ \infty & p_1 = n + 1 \end{cases}$$

This follows directly from Theorem 1 and Corollary 1. Using Proposition 2, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Proposition 4: } \frac{np_1^2 - (n-1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^2 - (n+1)p_1 + n} &\leq p_2 \leq \frac{np_1}{p_1 - n - 1} \quad p_1 \neq n + 1 \\ n^2 + n + 1 &\leq p_2 < \infty \quad p_1 = n + 1 \end{aligned}$$

Using these propositions, we have essentially proved the following important theorem.

Theorem 3: Given n , $n+1 \leq p_1 \leq 2n-1$, if n is not convolutionary, then there can be at most finitely many n -HP of the form $m = p_1^{\alpha_1} p_2$.

Table 2 and Table 3 show the allowable values for p_1 , given n , along with the bounds for p_2 . We can now obtain results similar to those of Corollary 4.

Corollary 5: If m is Linear 2-HP, then it can only be of the form

$$3^{t-1}(3^t - 2).$$

Corollary 6: a) If m is Linear 3-HP, then it must be of the form

$$\frac{5^{t-1}3 \cdot 5^t - 11}{5^{t-1} + 3}$$

b) There is exactly one Linear 3-HP (see Tables 2 and 3).

Corollary 7: a) There are no Linear 4-HP rooted on 7 (see Tables 2 and 3).

b) There are Linear 4-HP rooted on 5. For example,

$$m = 5^4(5^4 - 4) = 5^4(3121).$$

Corollary 8: There are no Linear 5-HP.

Corollary 9: There are no Linear 7-HP.

Table 2. Allowable Values of p_1 and Bounds on p_2

| n | Allowable Roots | | | |
|-----|--------------------|------------|------------|------------|
| 2 | 3(7, ∞) | | | |
| 3 | 5(8, 15) | | | |
| 4 | 5(21, ∞) | 7(9, 14) | | |
| 5 | 7(18, 35) | | | |
| 6 | 7(43, ∞) | 11(13, 17) | | |
| 7 | 11(19, 26) | 13(15, 19) | | |
| 8 | 11(29, 44) | 13(21, 26) | | |
| 9 | 11(50, 99) | 13(29, 39) | 17(19, 22) | |
| 10 | 11(111, ∞) | 13(43, 65) | 17(24, 29) | 19(21, 24) |

Table 3. p_2 as a Function of p_1 , n , and α

| α | $p_1 = 5$ | | $p_1 = 7$ | |
|--------------|-----------|---------|-----------|---------|
| \downarrow | $n = 3$ | $n = 4$ | $n = 4$ | $n = 5$ |
| 1 | 8 | 21 | 9.66 | 18 |
| 2 | 13 | 121 | 13.23 | 31.22 |
| 3 | 14.56 | 621 | 13.88 | 34.41 |
| 4 | 14.91 | 3121 | 13.98 | 34.91 |
| 5 | 14.98 | 15621 | 13.99 | 34.98 |
| 6 | 14.99 | 78121 | 13.999 | 34.99 |
| 7 | 14.999 | 390621 | 13.9999 | 34.999 |
| 8 | 14.999 | 1953121 | 13.99999 | 34.9999 |

| α | $p_1 = 11$ | | | $p_1 = 13$ | |
|--------------|------------|----------|----------|------------|----------|
| \downarrow | $n = 7$ | $n = 8$ | $n = 9$ | $n = 7$ | $n = 8$ |
| 1 | 19.50 | 29.66 | 50 | 15.33 | 21 |
| 2 | 25 | 42.28 | 91.46 | 17.95 | 25.56 |
| 3 | 25.60 | 43.83 | 98.26 | 18.18 | 25.96 |
| 4 | 25.66 | 43.98 | 98.93 | 18.19 | 25.997 |
| 5 | 25.666 | 43.99 | 98.99 | 18.199 | 25.9997 |
| 6 | 25.6666 | 43.999 | 98.999 | 18.1999 | 25.99998 |
| 7 | 25.66666 | 43.9999 | 98.9999 | 18.19999 | |
| 8 | | 43.99999 | 98.99999 | | |

Further bounds are derived below. We have already given one such bound:

$$p_2 \leq \frac{np_1}{p_1 - n - 1} \quad \text{for } n \text{ nonconvolutionary}$$

$$p_1 = n + 2 \quad p_2 \leq n^2 + 2n$$

$$p_1 = n + 3 \quad p_2 \leq \frac{n(n+3)}{2}$$

$$p_1 = n + 4 \quad p_2 \leq \frac{n(n+4)}{3}$$

Therefore,

Proposition 5: Let n be nonconvolutionary. If m is Linear n -HP, then

$$p_2 \leq n^2 + 2n.$$

More generally,

Proposition 6: Let $d_n = p - n$, where p is the first prime larger than n . Then

$$\frac{n(n + d_n)^2 - (n - 1)(n + d) - 1}{(n + d_n)^2 \leq (n + 1)(n + d_n) + n} \leq p_2 \leq \frac{n(n + d_n)}{d_n - 1},$$

which is valid for $d_n \geq 1$.

Proposition 7: Let m be Linear n -HP, n nonconvolutionary. Then $p_2 \geq 2n + 1$.

Proof: (From the previous general bound on p_2 , we see that this statement is also true for convolutionary n .) The proof involves looking at the expression for p_2 , given that $p_1 = n + i$, $2 \leq i \leq n - 1$. Suppose $p_1 = n + 2$. Since m is Linear n -HP, we have

$$p_2 \geq \frac{np_1^2 - (n - 1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^2 - (n + 1)p_1 + 1}.$$

But $p_1 = n + 2$, so that

$$p_2 \geq \frac{n(n + 2)^2 - (n - 1)(n + 2) - 1}{(n + 2)^2 - (n + 1)(n + 2) + n} = \frac{(n + 1)^3}{2(n + 1)} = \frac{(n + 1)^2}{2} = \frac{n^2 + 2n + 1}{2}.$$

However, $n^2 > 2n$ ($n > 2$), so that for this case $p_2 \geq 2n$ or $p_2 \geq 2n + 1$. Similar arguments hold for $p = n + 3, n + 4, \dots$. We show the case $p = 2n - 1$. We have

$$\begin{aligned} p_2 &\geq \frac{n(2n - 1)^2 - (n - 1)(2n - 1) - 1}{(2n - 1)^2 - (n + 1)(2n - 1) + n} = \frac{2n^3 - 3n^2 + 2n - 1}{n^2 - 2n + 1} \\ &= 2n + 1 + \frac{2n - 2}{n^2 - 2n + 1}. \end{aligned}$$

(Note that $n \neq 1$.) Therefore, again, $p_2 \geq 2n + 1$. Q.E.D.

Proposition 8: If $m = p_1^{\alpha_1} p_2$ is a Linear n -HP, n nonconvolutionary, then

$$\alpha_1 \leq \frac{\log \left[\frac{n^2 p_1}{p_1 - n - 1} + (n - 1)p_1 + 1 \right]}{\log p_1}$$

Proof: We have shown that p_2 tends monotonically to $e = (np_1)/(p_1 - n - 1)$ as $\alpha \rightarrow \infty$. Let e' be the greatest integer smaller than e . Setting

$$\frac{np_1^{\alpha_1+1} - (n - 1)p_1 - 1}{p_1^{\alpha_1}(p_1 - n - 1) + n} = e',$$

and solving for α_1 , we obtain

$$\alpha_1 = \frac{\log \left[\frac{ne' + (n-1)p_1 + 1}{np_1 - e'(p_1 - n - 1)} \right]}{\log p_1}.$$

However,

$$\frac{ne' + (n-1)p_1 + 1}{np_1 - e'(p_1 - n - 1)} \leq n \frac{np_1}{p_1 - n - 1} + (n-1)p_1 + 1,$$

and, in fact, the equality holds in many cases. The result follows. Q.E.D.

The following statement summarizes the bounds for a linear n -HP:

1. $n+1 \leq p_1 \leq 2n-1$;
2. $\begin{cases} \text{if } p_1 = n+1, \text{ then } n^2 + n + 1 \leq p_2 < \infty, \\ \text{if } p_1 > n+1, \text{ then } 2n+1 \leq p_2 \leq n^2 + 2n; \end{cases}$
3. if $p_1 > n+1$, then $\alpha_1 < \frac{\log \left[\frac{n^2 p_1}{p_1 - n - 1} + (n-1)p_1 + 1 \right]}{\log p_1}.$

Notwithstanding the fact that no Superlinear and Nonlinear n -HP have been observed, we can still derive sufficient forms for these numbers (if they exist). It may be shown that

Proposition 9: $m = p_1^{\alpha_1} p_2^{\alpha_2} \dots p_{j-1}^{\alpha_{j-1}} p_j$ is a Superlinear n -HP if and only if

$$p_j = \frac{n\Pi(p_1^{\alpha_1+1} - 1) + (1-n)\Pi(p_i - 1)}{(n+1)\Pi(p_i - 1)\Pi p_i^{\alpha_i} - n\Pi(p_i^{\alpha_i+1} - 1)}.$$

3. CONCLUSION

Theorem 1 and Proposition 9 guarantee that, if an integer has a specific prime decomposition, then it is n -HP. However, no n -HP with these forms was observed in the search up to 1,500,000. One reason for such an unavailability could be the fact that the search was limited. The last term required by these theorems is a fraction or even involves a radical; hence, to ask that this expression turn out to be an integer and, moreover, a prime, is a strong demand. Possibly, very rare combinations of primes could generate the required conditions. It has been shown that indeed some forms are impossible.

The other explanation is that there are only Linear n -HP, and thus Theorem 1 is *necessary* and *sufficient* for a number to be n -HP, just as in the regular perfect number case. Such a statement would have a critical impact on the generalized perfect number problem. In fact, in view of the corollaries presented above, there would be no n -HP for various values of n .

Computer time (PDP 11/70) for Table 1 was over ten hours.

REFERENCES

1. L.E. Dickson. *History of the Theory of Numbers*. Vol. 1. New York: Chelsea Publishing Company, 1952.
2. H.L. Abbot *et al.* "Quasiperfect Numbers." *Acta. Arith.* 22 (1973):439-447, MR47#4915.
3. M. Kishore. "Odd Almost Perfect Numbers." Abst. #75FA92. *Notices Amer. Math. Soc.* 22 (1975):A-380.

4. R. Jerrard & N. Temperley. "Almost Perfect Numbers." *Math Mag.* 46 (1973): 84-87.
5. J. T. Cross. "A Note on Almost Perfect Numbers." *Math Mag.* 47 (1974): 230-231.
6. P. Hagis & G. Lord. "Quasi-Amicable Numbers." *Math Comp.* 31 (1977): 608-611.
7. H. Cohen. "On Amicable and Sociable Numbers." *Math Comp.* 24 (1970): 423-429.
8. P. Bratley *et al.* "Amicable Numbers and Their Distribution." *Math Comp.* 24 (1970): 431-432.
9. W. E. Beck & R. M. Najjar. "More Reduced Amicable Pairs." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 15 (1977): 331-332.
10. P. Hagis. "Lower Bounds for Relatively Prime Amicable Numbers of Opposite Parity." *Math Comp.* 24 (1970): 963-968.
11. P. Hagis. "Unitary Amicable Numbers." *Math Comp.* 25 (1971): 915-918.
12. M. Kishore. "Odd Integer N Five Distinct Prime Factors for Which $2 - 10^{-12} < \sigma(N)/N < 2 + 10^{-12}$." *Math Comp.* 32 (1978): 303-309.
13. L. E. Dickson. "Finiteness of the Odd Perfect and Primitive Abundant Numbering with a Distinct Prime Factor." *Amer. J. Math.* 35 (1913): 413-422.
14. P. Hagis. "A Lower Bound for the Set of Odd Perfect Numbers." *Math Comp.* 27 (1973): 951-953.
15. B. Tukerman. "A Search Procedure and Lower Bound for Odd Perfect Numbers." *Math Comp.* 27 (1973): 943-949.
16. J. Benkoski & P. Erdős. "On Weird and Pseudo Perfect Numbers." *Math Comp.* 28 (1974): 617-623.
17. A. E. Zackariou. "Perfect, Semi-Perfect and Ore Numbers." *Bull. Soc. Mater Grece* 13 (1972): 12-22.
18. D. Minoli & R. Bear. "Hyperperfect Numbers." *PME Journal* (Fall 1975), pp. 153-157.

ON RECIPROCAL SERIES RELATED TO FIBONACCI NUMBERS WITH SUBSCRIPTS IN ARITHMETIC PROGRESSION

ROBERT P. BACKSTROM

Australian Atomic Energy Commission, Sutherland, NSW 2232

1. INTRODUCTION

Recently, interest has been shown in summing infinite series of reciprocals of Fibonacci numbers [1], [2], and [3]. As V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., and Marjorie Bicknell state [2]: "It is not easy, in general, to derive the sum of a series whose terms are reciprocals of Fibonacci numbers such that the subscripts are terms of geometric progressions." It seems even more difficult if the subscripts are in arithmetic progression. To take a very simple example, to my knowledge the series

$$(1.1) \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_n}$$

has not been evaluated in closed form, although Brother U. Alfred has derived formulas connecting it with other highly convergent series [4].

In this note, we develop formulas for closely related series of the form

$$(1.2) \quad \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{an+b} + c}$$

for certain values of a , b , and c . Examples include the following:

$$(1.3) \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{2n+1} + 1} = \sqrt{5}/2, \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{2n+1} + 2} = 3\sqrt{5}/8,$$

$$\sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{2n+1} + 5} = 5\sqrt{5}/22, \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{2n+1} + 13} = 7\sqrt{5}/58.$$

In fact, much more than this is true. Each of these series may be further broken down into a remarkable set of symmetric series illustrated by the following examples:

$$(1.4) \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+1} + 13} = (\sqrt{5} + 2)/58, \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+13} + 13} = (\sqrt{5} - 2)/58,$$

$$\sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+3} + 13} = (\sqrt{5} + 5/3)/58, \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+11} + 13} = (\sqrt{5} - 5/3)/58,$$

$$\sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+5} + 13} = (\sqrt{5} + 1)/58, \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+9} + 13} = (\sqrt{5} - 1)/58,$$

$$\sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{14n+7} + 13} = \sqrt{5}/58.$$

It will be noted that the sum of the series in (1.4) agrees with that given in (1.3)—namely, $7\sqrt{5}/58$ —since the rational terms cancel out in pairs. Also, the reader will have noticed the use of $c = 1, 2, 5$, and 13 in these examples. They are, of course, the Fibonacci numbers with odd subscripts. Unfortunately, the methods of this note do not apply to values of c which are Fibonacci numbers with even subscripts.

2. MAIN RESULTS

The main results of this note are summarized in three theorems: Theorem I provides a formulation of series of the form (1.3); Theorem II gives finer results where the sums are broken down into individual series similar to those in (1.4); Theorem III reveals even more detailed information in the form of explicit formulas for the partial sums of series in Theorem II.

In the following discussion, it will be assumed that K represents an odd integer and that t is an integer in the range $-(K-1)/2$ to $(K-1)/2$ inclusive.

Theorem I:

$$S(K) = \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{2n+1} + F_K} = K\sqrt{5}/2L_K.$$

Theorem II:

$$S(K, t) = \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{(2n+1)K+2t} + F_K} = (\sqrt{5} - 5F_t/L_t)/2L_K \quad t \text{ even},$$

$$= (\sqrt{5} - L_t/F_t)/2L_K \quad t \text{ odd}.$$

Theorem III:

$$S_N(K, t) = \sum_0^N \frac{1}{F_{(2n+1)K+2t} + F_K} = \left(\frac{L_{(N+1)K+t}}{F_{(N+1)K+t}} - \frac{5F_t}{L_t} \right) / 2L_K \quad N \text{ even}, t \text{ even} \quad (a)$$

(continued)

$$= \left(\frac{5F_{(N+1)K+t}}{L_{(N+1)K+t}} - \frac{L_t}{F_t} \right) / 2L_K \quad N \text{ even, } t \text{ odd;} \quad (b)$$

$$= \left(\frac{5F_{(N+1)K+t}}{L_{(N+1)K+t}} - \frac{5F_t}{L_t} \right) / 2L_K \quad N \text{ odd, } t \text{ even;} \quad (c)$$

$$= \left(\frac{L_{(N+1)K+t}}{F_{(N+1)K+t}} - \frac{L_t}{F_t} \right) / 2L_K \quad N \text{ odd, } t \text{ odd.} \quad (d)$$

3. ELEMENTARY RESULTS

We shall adopt the usual Fibonacci and Lucas number definitions:

$$F_{n+2} = F_{n+1} + F_n \text{ with } F_0 = 0 \text{ and } F_1 = 1;$$

$$L_{n+2} = L_{n+1} + L_n \text{ with } L_0 = 2 \text{ and } L_1 = 1.$$

We shall also employ the well-known Binet forms:

$$F_n = (\alpha^n - \beta^n) / \sqrt{5} \text{ and } L_n = \alpha^n + \beta^n$$

where $\alpha = (1 + \sqrt{5})/2$ and $\beta = (1 - \sqrt{5})/2$. Other elementary results which will be required include $\alpha\beta = -1$ and $F_{2a} = F_a L_a$.

4. PROOF OF MAIN RESULTS

To prove Theorems I, II, and III, it will be sufficient to prove Theorem III together with several short lemmas that establish the connection with Theorems I and II.

Lemma 1: $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{L_n}{F_n} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{5F_n}{L_n} = \sqrt{5}.$

Proof: From the Binet forms, we have

$$\frac{L_n}{F_n} = \frac{\sqrt{5}(\alpha^n + \beta^n)}{(\alpha^n - \beta^n)} = \frac{\sqrt{5}(1 + (-1)^n \beta^{2n})}{(1 - (-1)^n \beta^{2n})} \rightarrow \sqrt{5} \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty.$$

The second part follows immediately, since $5/\sqrt{5} = \sqrt{5}$.

Lemma 2: $\frac{L_t}{F_t} = -\frac{L_{-t}}{F_{-t}}.$

Proof: Again using the Binet forms, we have

$$\begin{aligned} -\frac{L_{-t}}{F_{-t}} &= \frac{-\sqrt{5}(\alpha^{-t} + \beta^{-t})}{(\alpha^{-t} - \beta^{-t})} = \frac{-\sqrt{5}((-1)^t \beta^t + (-1)^t \alpha^t)}{((-1)^t \beta^t - (-1)^t \alpha^t)} \\ &= \frac{-\sqrt{5}(\beta^t + \alpha^t)}{(\beta^t - \alpha^t)} = \frac{\sqrt{5}(\alpha^t + \beta^t)}{(\alpha^t - \beta^t)} = \frac{L_t}{F_t}. \quad \text{Q.E.D.} \end{aligned}$$

Theorem II may therefore be deduced from Theorem III and Lemma 1 and taking the limits as N approaches infinity. Summation of the results of Theorem II over the K values of t ranging from $-(K-1)/2$ to $(K-1)/2$ inclusive implies the truth of Theorem I, since the rational terms cancel out in pairs (as guaranteed by Lemma 2).

Before proceeding to the proof of Theorem III, we will need the results of the following four lemmas.

Lemma 3: $F_{a+2b} + F_a = F_{a+b} \cdot L_b$ for b even.

Proof: Since b is even, $(\alpha\beta)^b = +1$.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{RHS} &= (\alpha^{a+b} - \beta^{a+b})(\alpha^b + \beta^b)/\sqrt{5} \\ &= (\alpha^{a+2b} + \alpha^{a+b} \cdot \beta^b - \beta^{a+b} \cdot \alpha^b - \beta^{a+2b})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= (\alpha^{a+2b} - \beta^{a+2b} + (\alpha\beta)^b(\alpha^a - \beta^a))/\sqrt{5} \\ &= F_{a+2b} + F_a = \text{LHS}. \end{aligned}$$

Lemma 4: $F_{2a+b} + F_b = F_a \cdot L_{a+b}$ for a odd.

Proof: Since a is odd, $(\alpha\beta)^a = -1$.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{RHS} &= (\alpha^a - \beta^a)(\alpha^{a+b} + \beta^{a+b})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= (\alpha^{2a+b} + \alpha^a \cdot \beta^{a+b} - \beta^a \cdot \alpha^{a+b} - \beta^{2a+b})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= (\alpha^{2a+b} - \beta^{2a+b} - (\alpha\beta)^a(\alpha^b - \beta^b))/\sqrt{5} \\ &= F_{2a+b} + F_b = \text{LHS}. \end{aligned}$$

Lemma 5: $L_a \cdot L_b - 5F_a \cdot F_b = 2L_{a-b}$ for b even.

Proof: Since b is even, $(\alpha\beta)^b = +1$.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{LHS} &= (\alpha^a + \beta^a)(\alpha^b + \beta^b) - (\alpha^a - \beta^a)(\alpha^b - \beta^b) \\ &= \alpha^{a+b} + \alpha^a \cdot \beta^b + \beta^a \cdot \alpha^b + \beta^{a+b} - \alpha^{a+b} + \alpha^a \cdot \beta^b + \beta^a \cdot \alpha^b - \beta^{a+b} \\ &= (\alpha\beta)^b(\alpha^{a-b} + \beta^{a-b} + \alpha^{a-b} + \beta^{a-b}) \\ &= 2(\alpha^{a-b} + \beta^{a-b}) = 2L_{a-b} = \text{RHS}. \end{aligned}$$

Lemma 6: $L_a \cdot F_b - F_a \cdot L_b = 2F_{a-b}$ for b odd.

Proof: Since b is odd, $(\alpha\beta)^b = -1$.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{LHS} &= ((\alpha^a + \beta^a)(\alpha^b - \beta^b) - (\alpha^a - \beta^a)(\alpha^b + \beta^b))/\sqrt{5} \\ &= (\alpha^{a+b} - \alpha^a \cdot \beta^b + \beta^a \cdot \alpha^b - \beta^{a+b} - \alpha^{a+b} - \alpha^a \cdot \beta^b + \beta^a \cdot \alpha^b + \beta^{a+b})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= -(\alpha\beta)^b(\alpha^{a-b} - \beta^{a-b} + \alpha^{a-b} - \beta^{a-b})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= 2(\alpha^{a-b} - \beta^{a-b})/\sqrt{5} = 2F_{a-b} = \text{RHS}. \end{aligned}$$

We shall prove part (a) of Theorem III in full and leave the details of parts (b), (c), and (d) to the reader, since they follow exactly the same pattern. In the discussion that follows, we will assume both N and t to be even.

We shall proceed by induction on N .

$N = 0$: We must prove that

$$\frac{1}{F_{K+2t} + F_K} = \left(\frac{L_{K+t}}{F_{K+t}} - \frac{5F_t}{L_t} \right) / 2L_K.$$

Using Lemma 3 with $\alpha = K$ and $b = t$ gives $F_{K+2t} + F_K = F_{K+t} \cdot L_t$. Hence

$$\text{LHS} = \frac{1}{F_{K+t} \cdot L_t} \quad \text{and} \quad \text{RHS} = \frac{L_{K+t} \cdot L_t - 5F_{K+t} \cdot F_t}{2F_{K+t} \cdot L_t \cdot L_K}.$$

Using Lemma 5 with $\alpha = K+t$ and $b = t$ gives $L_{K+t} \cdot L_t - 5F_{K+t} \cdot F_t = 2L_K$. Hence

$$\text{RHS} = \frac{2L_K}{2F_{K+t} \cdot L_t \cdot L_K} = \frac{1}{F_{K+t} \cdot L_t} = \text{LHS}.$$

Assuming that Theorem III (a) is true for $N = M$ (where M is even), we must prove it true for $N = M + 2$. Hence, the sum of the two extra terms on the LHS corresponding to $N = M + 1$ and $N = M + 2$ must equal the difference in the RHS formulas for $N = M + 2$ and $N = M$. Therefore, we must prove that

$$\frac{1}{F_{(2M+3)K+2t} + F_K} + \frac{1}{F_{(2M+5)K+2t} + F_K} = \left(\frac{L_{(M+3)K+t}}{F_{(M+3)K+t}} - \frac{5F_t}{L_t} \right) / 2L_K - \left(\frac{L_{(M+1)K+t}}{F_{(M+1)K+t}} - \frac{5F_t}{L_t} \right) / 2L_K.$$

To simplify the following algebra, we introduce the odd integer P , where

$$P = (M + 1)K + t.$$

This means that we must now prove that

$$\frac{1}{F_{2P+K} + F_K} + \frac{1}{F_{2P+3K} + F_K} = \left(\frac{L_{P+2K}}{F_{P+2K}} - \frac{L_P}{F_P} \right) / 2L_K$$

Using Lemma 4 with $a = P$ and $b = K$ gives

$$F_{2P+K} + F_K = F_P \cdot L_{P+K}.$$

Using Lemma 3 with $a = K$ and $b = P + K$ gives

$$F_{2P+3K} + F_K = F_{P+2K} \cdot L_{P+K};$$

$$\text{LHS} = \frac{1}{F_P \cdot L_{P+K}} + \frac{1}{F_{P+2K} \cdot L_{P+K}} = \frac{F_{P+2K} + F_P}{F_P \cdot L_{P+K} \cdot F_{P+2K}}$$

Using Lemma 4 with $a = K$ and $b = P$ gives

$$F_{P+2K} + F_P = F_K \cdot L_{P+K};$$

$$\text{LHS} = \frac{F_K \cdot L_{P+K}}{F_P \cdot L_{P+K} \cdot F_{P+2K}} = \frac{F_K}{F_P \cdot F_{P+2K}};$$

$$\text{RHS} = \frac{L_{P+2K} \cdot F_P - F_{P+2K} \cdot L_P}{2F_{P+2K} \cdot F_P \cdot L_K}.$$

Using Lemma 6 with $a = P + 2K$ and $b = P$ gives

$$L_{P+2K} \cdot F_P - F_{P+2K} \cdot L_P = 2F_{2K} = 2F_K \cdot L_K;$$

$$\text{RHS} = \frac{2F_K \cdot L_K}{2F_{P+2K} \cdot F_P \cdot L_K} = \frac{F_K}{F_{P+2K} \cdot F_P} = \text{LHS}.$$

5. EXTENSION TO LUCAS NUMBERS

Similar results may be obtained by substituting Lucas numbers for the Fibonacci numbers in (1.2). In this case, however, even subscripts are required. Examples equivalent to those in (1.3) include the following:

$$(5.1) \quad \begin{aligned} \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + 3} &= (2\sqrt{5} + 1)/10 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + 7} &= (4\sqrt{5} + 5/3)/30 \\ \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + 18} &= (6\sqrt{5} + 2)/80 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + 47} &= (8\sqrt{5} + 15/7)/210 \end{aligned}$$

These series may also be broken down into subseries similar to those in (1.4). For example:

$$\begin{aligned}
 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{12n} + 18} = (\sqrt{5} + 2)/80 \\
 (5.2) \quad & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{12n+2} + 18} = (\sqrt{5} + 5/3)/80 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{12n+10} + 18} = (\sqrt{5} - 5/3)/80 \\
 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{12n+4} + 18} = (\sqrt{5} + 1)/80 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{12n+8} + 18} = (\sqrt{5} - 1)/80 \\
 & \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{12n+6} + 18} = \sqrt{5}/80
 \end{aligned}$$

Notice that, in this case, the rational terms occur in pairs except for the first series. This explains the presence of the residual rational terms in (5.1) above.

The following three theorems (IV-V) summarize the above results. They are given without proof, since the methods required exactly parallel those of Section 4. In these theorems, We assume that K is an even integer and that t is an integer in the range $-K/2$ to $K/2 - 1$ inclusive.

Theorem IV:

$$\begin{aligned}
 T(K) &= \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + L_K} = K\sqrt{5}/10F_K + 1/2L_{K/2}^2 & K/2 \text{ even,} \\
 &= K\sqrt{5}/10F_K + 1/10F_{K/2}^2 & K/2 \text{ odd.}
 \end{aligned}$$

Theorem V:

$$\begin{aligned}
 T(K, t) &= \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{(2n+1)K+2t} + L_K} = (\sqrt{5} - 5F_t/L_t)/10F_K & t \text{ even,} \\
 &= (\sqrt{5} - L_t/F_t)/10F_K & t \text{ odd.}
 \end{aligned}$$

Theorem VI:

$$\begin{aligned}
 T_N(K, t) &= \sum_0^N \frac{1}{L_{(2n+1)K+2t} + L_K} \\
 &= \left(\frac{5F_{(N+1)K+t}}{L_{(N+1)K+t}} - \frac{5F_t}{L_t} \right) / 10F_K & t \text{ even,} \\
 &= \left(\frac{L_{(N+1)K+t}}{F_{(N+1)K+t}} - \frac{L_t}{F_t} \right) / 10F_K & t \text{ odd.}
 \end{aligned}$$

6. A TANTALIZING PROBLEM

If we let $K=0$ in Theorem V or VI, we find that they give divergent series. However, if we formally substitute $K=0$ into Theorem IV (without, as yet, any mathematical justification), we find that the LHS is finite, namely:

$$(6.1) \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + 2} = .64452 \ 17830 \ 67274 \ 44209 \ 92731 \ 19038$$

(to 30 decimal places). The RHS, however, contains the indeterminate form K/F_K .

If we take the liberty of defining a Fibonacci function such as

$$\begin{aligned} f(x) &= (\alpha^x - (-1)^x \alpha^{-x})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= (\alpha^x - (\cos \pi x + i \sin \pi x) \alpha^{-x})/\sqrt{5} \\ &= ((\alpha^x - \cos \pi x \cdot \alpha^{-x}) - i \sin \pi x \cdot \alpha^{-x})/\sqrt{5} \end{aligned}$$

and differentiate with respect to x , the real part becomes:

$$\operatorname{Re}[f'(x)] = (\ln \alpha \cdot \alpha^x + \pi \sin \pi x \cdot \alpha^{-x} + \cos \pi x \cdot \ln \alpha \cdot \alpha^{-x})/\sqrt{5}$$

and

$$\operatorname{Re}[f'(0)] = (\ln \alpha \cdot 1 + \pi \cdot 0 \cdot 1 + 1 \cdot \ln \alpha \cdot 1)/\sqrt{5} = 2 \ln \alpha / \sqrt{5}.$$

Substituting this value into the RHS of Theorem IV gives:

$$(6.2) \quad 1/(4 \ln \alpha) + 1/8 = .64452 \ 17303 \ 08756 \ 88440 \ 03306 \ 51529$$

(to 30 decimal places). The difference between the values in (6.1) and (6.2) is obvious, but can any reader resolve this most tantalizing problem?

7. CONCLUSIONS

In this note, we have established explicit formulas for a number of series of the form

$$(7.1) \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{an+b} + c} \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{an+b} + c}$$

for certain values of a , b , and c positive. Similar results apply for c negative, but because of the possibility of a zero denominator, the series must begin with the term in which $an+b > K$. This leads to less elegant formulas, such as the following:

$$(7.2) \quad \begin{aligned} \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{6n+5} - 2} &= (5 - \sqrt{5})/8 \\ \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{6n+7} - 2} &= (3 - \sqrt{5})/8 \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{6n+9} - 2} = (5/2 - \sqrt{5})/8. \end{aligned}$$

Summing these three series gives

$$(7.3) \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{F_{2n+5} - 2} = (21/2 - 3\sqrt{5})/8,$$

where the symmetric form of (1.4) appears to have been lost. Similar results may be obtained using the Lucas numbers in (7.1). We leave the reader to investigate these formulas and to determine the true value of the series:

$$(7.4) \quad \sum_0^{\infty} \frac{1}{L_{2n} + 2}.$$

REFERENCES

1. I. J. Good. "A Reciprocal Series of Fibonacci Numbers." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 12 (1974):346.
2. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., & Marjorie Bicknell. "Variations on Summing a Series of Reciprocals of Fibonacci Numbers." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 14 (1976): 272-276.

3. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., & Marjorie Bicknell. "A Reciprocal Series of Fibonacci Numbers with Subscripts 2^k ." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 14 (1976):453-455.
4. Brother U. Alfred. "Summation of Infinite Fibonacci Series." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 7 (1969):143-168.

ON THE EQUATION $\sigma(m)\sigma(n) = (m+n)^2$

MASAO KISHORE

The University of Toledo, Toledo, OH 43606

1. A pair of positive integers m and n are called amicable if

$$\sigma(m)\sigma(n) = (m+n)^2 \quad \text{and} \quad \sigma(m) = \sigma(n).$$

Although over a thousand pairs of amicable numbers are known, no pairs of relatively prime amicable numbers are known. Some necessary conditions for existence of such numbers are given in [1], [2], and [3].

In this paper, we show that some of the conditions are also necessary for the existence of m and n satisfying

- (1) $\sigma(m)\sigma(n) = (m+n)^2$,
- and
- (2) $(m, n) = 1$.

In particular we prove

Theorem: If m and n satisfy (1) and (2), mn is divisible by at least twenty-two distinct primes.

Corollary (Hagis [3]): The product of relatively prime amicable numbers are divisible by twenty-two distinct primes.

2. Throughout this paper, let m and n be positive integers satisfying (1) and (2), and let

$$mn = \prod_{i=1}^r p_i^{a_i}$$

where $p_1 < \dots < p_r$ are primes and the a_i 's are positive integers. Since σ is multiplicative,

$$\prod_{i=1}^r \sigma(p_i^{a_i}) = \sigma(mn) = (m+n)^2.$$

If k and a are positive integers, p is a prime and if $p^a | k$ and $p^{a+1} \nmid k$, then we write $p^a || k$. $\omega(k)$ denotes the number of distinct prime factors of k .

Lemma 1: $\sigma(mn)/mn > 4$.

Proof: By (1) and (2)

$$\frac{\sigma(mn)}{mn} = \frac{(m+n)^2}{mn} = 4 + \frac{(m-n)^2}{mn} > 4. \quad \text{Q.E.D.}$$

Lemma 2: If q is a prime, $q | mn$ and if $p^a | mn$, $q \nmid \sigma(p^a)$.

Proof: Suppose q is a prime, $q | mn$, $p^a | mn$, and $q | \sigma(p^a)$. Since

$$\sigma(p^a) | (m+n)^2,$$

$q | m+n$. Then $q | m$ and $q | n$, contradicting (2). Q.E.D.

Lemma 3: If $\omega(mn) \leq 21$, $2 \mid mn$.

Proof: Suppose

$$mn = \prod_{i=1}^r p_i^{a_i}, \quad r \leq 21, \text{ and } 3 \leq p_1.$$

If q_i is the i th prime, we have, by Lemma 1,

$$4 < \frac{\sigma(mn)}{mn} = \prod_{i=1}^r \frac{\sigma(p_i^{a_i})}{p_i^{a_i}} < \prod_{i=1}^r \frac{p_i}{p_i - 1} \leq \prod_{i=2}^{r+1} \frac{q_i}{q_i - 1}.$$

Since

$$\prod_{i=2}^{r+1} q_i / (q_i - 1) < 4 \text{ if } r \leq 20, \quad r = 21.$$

Then

$$(3) \quad 3 \cdot 5 \cdot 7 \cdot 11 \cdot 13 \cdot 17 \cdot 19 \cdot 23 \cdot 29 \cdot 31 \cdot 37 \cdot 41 \cdot 43 \cdot 47 \cdot 53 \cdot 59 \cdot 61 \mid mn$$

and

$$(4) \quad p_{21} \leq 113$$

because

$$\prod_{i=2}^{17} \frac{q_i}{q_i - 1} \prod_{i=19}^{22} \frac{q_i}{q_i - 1} < 4 \quad \text{and} \quad \prod_{i=2}^{21} \frac{q_i}{q_i - 1} \frac{127}{126} < 4.$$

Suppose $p^d \mid mn$ and $p \neq 3, 7, 31$. Then $p \leq 113$ and $p \equiv -1(q)$ for some prime $3 \leq q \leq 37$. If d is odd, then $1 + p \mid \sigma(p^d)$, and we have $q \mid \sigma(p^d)$ and $q \mid mn$, contradicting Lemma 2. Hence, d is even, and $mn = 3^a 7^b 31^c e^2$, where

$$(e, 2 \cdot 3 \cdot 7 \cdot 31) = 1.$$

Since

$$\prod_{i=1}^{21} \sigma(p_i^{a_i}) = (m+n)^2$$

is even and $\sigma(p_i^{a_i})$ is odd if a_i is even, at least one of a , b , or c is odd.

Suppose at least two of them are odd. Then

$$32 \mid \sigma(3^a) \sigma(7^b) \sigma(31^c) \sigma(e^2) = (m+n)^2,$$

or $8 \mid m+n$. Hence, $m \equiv -n(8)$, or $mn = -n^2 \equiv -1(8)$. If a is even, then b and c are odd and $mn = 3^a 7^b 31^c e^2 \equiv 1(8)$, while, if a is odd, then $mn \equiv \pm 3(8)$, a contradiction in both cases. Hence, only one of a , b , or c is odd.

Suppose a is odd and b and c are even. Then

$$m = 3^a f^2 \equiv 3(8)$$

and

$$n = g^2 \equiv 1(8) \quad [\text{or } m \equiv 1(8) \text{ and } n = 3(8)].$$

Hence, $m = 3 + 8h$ and $n = 1 + 8i$, for some h and i , and we have

$$\sigma(3^a) \sigma(f^2 g^2) = (m+n)^2 = (3 + 8h + 1 + 8i)^2 \equiv 0(16),$$

or $16 \mid \sigma(3^a)$. Since

$$\sigma(3^a) = (1 + 3)(1 + 3^2 + 3^4 + \dots + 3^{a-1}),$$

$4 \mid 1 + 3^2 + 3^4 + \dots + 3^{a-1}$, or $a \equiv 7(8)$. Then

$$\sigma(3^a) = (1 + 3)(1 + 3^2)(1 + 3^4)(1 + 3^8 + \dots + 3^{a-7}),$$

or $5 \mid \sigma(3^a)$ contradicting Lemma 2. Suppose b is odd and a and c are even. Then $m \equiv 7(8)$ and $n \equiv 1(8)$ [or $m \equiv 1(8)$ and $n = 7(8)$], $(m+n)^2 \equiv 0(64)$, $64 \mid \sigma(7^b)$, $b \equiv 7(8)$, $1 + 7^2 \mid \sigma(7^b)$, or $5 \mid \sigma(7^b)$, a contradiction. Suppose c is odd and a and

b are even. Then $64 \mid \sigma(31^e)$, $c \equiv 3(4)$, $1 + 31^2 \mid \sigma(31^c)$, or $13 \mid \sigma(31^c)$, a contradiction. Since we get a contradiction in every case,

$$2 \mid mn \text{ if } \omega(mn) \leq 21. \text{ Q.E.D.}$$

Lemma 4: $4 \nmid mn$.

Proof: Suppose

$$mn = 2^a \prod_{i=2}^r p_i^{a_i}, \text{ with } a \geq 1.$$

Since

$$\sigma(mn) = (2^{a+1} - 1) \prod_{i=2}^r \sigma(p_i^{a_i}) = (m+n)^2$$

is odd, a_i is even, and we have

$$m = 2^a b^2 \text{ and } n = c^2 \text{ [or } m = c^2 \text{ and } n = 2^a b^2].$$

Suppose a is even. Then $m = d^2$, and $2^{a+1} - 1$ has a prime factor $q \equiv 3(4)$. Since $q \mid m+n$, $c^2 \equiv -d^2(q)$. Since $(q, dc) = 1$ by Lemma 2, $(-d^2/q) = 1$, where (e/q) is the Legendre symbol. However,

$$(-d^2/q) = (-1/q) = (-1)^{\frac{q-1}{2}} = -1,$$

a contradiction. Hence, a is odd.

Suppose $a \geq 3$ is odd. Then

$$m = 2b^2 \text{ and } n = c^2 \text{ [or } m = c^2 \text{ and } n = 2b^2],$$

and $2^{a+1} - 1$ has a prime factor $q \equiv 5$ or $7(8)$. Since $q \mid m+n$ and $(q, 2bc) = 1$, $c^2 \equiv -2b^2(q)$, or $(-2b^2/q) = 1$. However,

$$(-2b^2/q) = (-2/q) = (-1/q)(2/q) = (-1)^{\frac{q-1}{2}}(-1)^{\frac{q^2-1}{8}} = -1,$$

a contradiction. Hence, $a = 1$. Q.E.D.

Lemma 5: If $2 \mid mn$, $\omega(mn) \geq 22$.

Proof: Suppose

$$mn = 2 \prod_{i=2}^r p_i^{a_i} \text{ and } r \leq 21.$$

Since

$$3 \prod_{i=2}^r \sigma(p_i^{a_i}) = (m+n)^2$$

is odd, $3 \nmid mn$, by Lemma 2, and so $5 \leq p_i$, a_i is even, and $3 \mid \sigma(p_j^{a_j})$ for some j . Then, as in Lemma 3, we have $r = 21$, (3) and (4). We can also show that $p_{20} \leq 83$. Suppose $p^a \mid mn$, $p \geq 5$, q is a prime, and $q \mid \sigma(p^a)$. Then, by Lemma 2, $q \nmid mn$, and by (3), $q > 61$; moreover, since $q \mid m+n$,

$$m = 2b^2 \text{ and } n = c^2 \text{ [or } m = c^2 \text{ and } n = 2b^2],$$

we have $c^2 \equiv -2b^2(q)$, or $(-2b^2/q) = 1$, and so $q \equiv 1$ or $3(8)$. Hence, if

$$(5) \quad 5 \leq q \leq 61, \text{ or } q \equiv 5 \text{ or } 7(8),$$

$q \nmid \sigma(p^a)$.

In [3] Hagis showed that if $3 \mid \sigma(p^a)$ then $\sigma(p^a)$ is divisible by a prime q satisfying (5), except when $p = 31, 73, 97$, or 103 , in which case $\sigma(p^a)$ is divisible by $s = 331, 1801, 3169$, or 3571 , respectively. Since

$$3 \prod_{i=2}^r \sigma(p_i^{a_i}) = (m+n)^2, \quad s^2 \mid \prod_{i=2}^r \sigma(p_i^{a_i}).$$

However, Hags also showed that, if $t^b \mid mn$, $t \neq p$ and $s \mid \sigma(t^b)$, then $\sigma(t^b)$ is divisible by a prime q satisfying (5). Hence, $s^2 \mid \sigma(p^a)$. Then $\sigma(p^a)$ is divisible by a prime $q = 5564773, 13925333, 570421$, or 985597 , respectively, satisfying (5), a contradiction. Hence, $r > 21$. Q.E.D.

Lemmas 3 and 5 prove our Theorem.

REFERENCES

1. H. J. Kanold. "Untere Schranken für teilerfremde befreundete Zahlen." *Arch. Math.* 4 (1953):399-401.
2. P. Hags, Jr. "Relatively Prime Amicable Numbers with Twenty-one Prime Divisors." *Math Mag.* 45 (1972):21-26,
3. P. Hags, Jr. "On the Number of Prime Factors of a Pair of Relatively Prime Amicable Numbers." *Math Mag.* 48 (1975):263-266.

A SPECIAL m TH-ORDER RECURRENCE RELATION

LEONARD E. FULLER

Kansas State University, Manhattan KA 66506

1. INTRODUCTION

In this paper, we consider m th-order recurrence relations whose characteristic equation has only one distinct root. We express the solution for the relation in powers of the single root. The proof for the solution depends upon a special property of factorial polynomials that is given in the first lemma. We conclude the paper by noting the simple form of the result for $m \geq 2, 3$.

2. A SPECIAL m TH-ORDER RECURRENCE RELATION

In this section, we shall consider an m th-order recurrence relation whose characteristic equation has only one distinct root λ . It is of the form

$$T = \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} \lambda^j T_{n-j}$$

with initial values T_0, \dots, T_{m-1} .

Before we can prove the solution for this relation, we must establish two lemmas. The first lemma gives a useful property of the factorial polynomials. With the second lemma, we obtain an evaluation for more general polynomials. These are actually elements in the vector space V_m of all polynomials in j of degree less than m . This vector space has a basis that consists of the constant $jP_0 = 1$ and the monic factorial polynomials in j :

$$jP_w = \frac{j!}{(j-w)!} = (j-0)(j-1) \dots (j-(w-1)); w = 1, \dots, m-1.$$

We will make use of the fact that the zeros of these polynomials are the integers $0, \dots, w-1$. We are now ready to state and prove the first lemma.

Lemma 2.1: For any integers m, w where $0 \leq w < m$,

$$\sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} jP_w = 0.$$

We first of all observe that for $w = 0$ the factorial polynomials are just the constant 1. For the summation, we then have:

$$\sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} = (1-1)^m = 0.$$

If $0 < w$ the polynomial $j^{P_w} = 0$ for $j = 0, \dots, w-1$. Hence in the given summation, we can omit the zero terms and start the summation at $j = w$. This gives

$$\sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} j^{P_w} = \sum_{j=w}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} j^{P_w}.$$

We change our summation variable to t by letting $j = w + t$. Then, we have for the summation:

$$\sum_{t=0}^{m-w} (-1)^{w+t} \binom{m}{m-w-t} w^{+tP_w} = (-1)^w \sum_{t=0}^{m-w} (-1)^t \frac{m!}{(m-w-t)!(w+t)!} \frac{(w+t)!}{t!}.$$

When we multiply the numerator and denominator by $(m-w)!$, we have the form:

$$(-1)^w \frac{m!}{(m-w)!} \sum_{t=0}^{m-w} (-1)^t \binom{m-w}{m-w-t} = (-1)^w \frac{m!}{(m-w)!} (1-1)^{m-w} = 0,$$

which is the result we set out to prove.

In the next lemma, we use the above result to prove a property of general polynomials $f(j) \in \mathbf{V}_m$.

Lemma 2.2: For any polynomial $f(j) \in \mathbf{V}_m$,

$$\sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} f(j) = f(0).$$

We shall first prove that

$$\sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} f(j) = 0,$$

which is the comparable result for $f(j)$ to that of j^{P_w} in Lemma 2.1.

Since $f(j) \in \mathbf{V}_m$, there exist constants c_w such that

$$f(j) = \sum_{w=0}^{m-1} j^{P_w} c_w.$$

Using this expression for $f(j)$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} f(j) &= \sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} \sum_{w=0}^{m-1} j^{P_w} c_w \\ &= \sum_{w=0}^{m-1} c_w \sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^j \binom{m}{m-j} j^{P_w} = \sum_{w=0}^{m-1} c_w(0) = 0 \end{aligned}$$

by Lemma 2.1.

We now break off the first term in the summation to obtain

$$\binom{m}{m} f(0) - \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} f(j) = 0,$$

so that

$$f(0) = \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} f(j),$$

which is the desired conclusion.

We shall apply this result to polynomials in \mathbf{V}_m of the form

$$\binom{m+i-j}{m-u} \binom{u-1+i-j}{u-1} = \frac{(m+i-j) \cdots (i+1-j)}{(m-u)!(u-1)!(u+i-j)}.$$

The zeros of these polynomials are the integers from $i + 1$ to $m + i$ with $u + i$ omitted. We are now ready to prove our major result.

Theorem 2.3: The m th-order recurrence relation

$$(1) \quad T_n = \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} \lambda^j T_{n-j},$$

T_0, \dots, T_{m-1} arbitrary, has for its solution:

$$(2) \quad T_{m+k} = \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \binom{m+k}{m-u} \binom{u-1+k}{u-1} \lambda^{u+k} T_{m-u}.$$

Before going to the proof by induction, we need to show that (2) is valid for $-m \leq k < 0$. In other words, it reduces to the arbitrary value. To show this we first write (2) as a polynomial in k :

$$T_{m+k} = \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \frac{(m+k) \cdots (1+k)}{(m-u)!(u-1)!(u+k)} \lambda^{u+k} T_{m-u}.$$

The integer k is negative, so we let $k = -s$. The polynomial in s now becomes

$$\frac{(m-s) \cdots (1-s)}{(m-u)!(u-1)!(u-s)}$$

which has for zeros the integers from 1 to m with u omitted. This means that in the summation for a fixed $k = -s$, all terms are zero except when $u = s$. The summand reduces to

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{(-1)^{s-1} (m-s) \cdots 1 (-1) \cdots (1-s)}{(m-s)!(s-1)!} \lambda^0 T_{m-s} &= \frac{(-1)^{s-1} (m-s)! (-1)^{s-1} (s-1)!}{(m-s)!(s-1)!} \lambda^0 T_{m-s} \\ &= T_{m-s} = T_{m+k}. \end{aligned}$$

This is the result we said is true.

To prove the theorem by induction on k , we first show that it is valid for $k = 0$. For this, we take $n = m$ in (1), so we have the relation

$$T_m = \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} \lambda^j T_{m-j}.$$

For $k = 0$ in (2), we have the solution

$$T_m = \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \binom{m}{m-u} \binom{u-1}{u-1} \lambda^u T_{m-u}.$$

These two results are equal for $u = j$.

We assume that the solution (2) is valid for $k = 0, \dots, i-1$, and we shall show it is true for $k = i$ and, hence, for all k .

We have for (1) when $n = m + i$,

$$T_{m+i} = \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} \lambda^j T_{m+i-j}$$

Substituting the solution (2) for T_{m+i-j} , we have

$$\begin{aligned} T_{m+i} &= \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} \lambda^j \left(\sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \binom{m+i-j}{m-u} \binom{u-1+i-j}{u-1} \lambda^{u+i-j} T_{m-u} \right) \\ &= \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \lambda^{u+i} T_{m-u} \sum_{j=1}^m (-1)^{j-1} \binom{m}{m-j} \binom{m+i-j}{m-u} \binom{u-1+i-j}{u-1}. \end{aligned}$$

The inside summation involves a polynomial $f(j) \in \mathbf{V}_m$ so we can apply Lemma 2.2. Evaluating $f(0)$ gives, for the summation:

$$T_{m+i} = \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \lambda^{u+1} T_{m-u} \binom{m+i}{m-u} \binom{u-1+i}{u-1}$$

Interchanging the order of factors in the summand gives (2) for $k = i$.

3. SPECIAL CASES

It may be helpful to consider the form of the problem for $m = 2, 3$. For $m = 2$, the relation is

$$T_n = 2\lambda T_{n-1} - \lambda^2 T_{n-2}$$

and the solution is

$$T_{2+k} = (2+k)\lambda^{1+k}T_1 - (1+k)\lambda^{2+k}T_0.$$

For $m = 3$, the relation is

$$T_n = 3\lambda T_{n-1} - 3\lambda^2 T_{n-2} + \lambda^3 T_{n-3},$$

and the solution is

$$\begin{aligned} T_{3+k} &= \binom{3+k}{2} \lambda^{1+k} T_2 - \binom{3+k}{1} \binom{1+k}{1} \lambda^{2+k} T_1 + \binom{2+k}{2} \lambda^{3+k} T_0 \\ &= \frac{(3+k)(2+k)}{2} \lambda^{1+k} T_2 - \frac{(3+k)(1+k)}{1} \lambda^{2+k} T_1 + \frac{(2+k)(1+k)}{2} \lambda^{3+k} T_0 \end{aligned}$$

For other small values of m , the solutions can be written out quite readily. The form of the solution suggests a couple of other ways to write it. For instance

$$T_{2+k} = (2+k)(1+k) \left[\frac{\lambda^{1+k}}{1+k} T_1 - \frac{\lambda^{2+k}}{2+k} T_0 \right] = 2 \binom{2+k}{2} \left[\frac{\lambda^{1+k}}{1+k} T_1 - \frac{\lambda^{2+k}}{2+k} T_0 \right]$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} T_{3+k} &= \frac{(3+k)(2+k)(1+k)}{2} \left[\frac{\lambda^{1+k}}{1+k} T_2 - \frac{2\lambda^{2+k}}{2+k} T_1 + \frac{\lambda^{3+k}}{3+k} T_0 \right] \\ &= 3 \binom{3+k}{3} \left[\binom{2}{2} \frac{\lambda^{1+k}}{1+k} T_2 - \binom{2}{1} \frac{\lambda^{2+k}}{2+k} T_1 + \binom{2}{0} \frac{\lambda^{3+k}}{3+k} T_0 \right]. \end{aligned}$$

These two forms, when applied to the general case, give a solution of the form

$$\begin{aligned} T_{m+k} &= \frac{(m+k) \cdots (1+k)}{(m-1)!} \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \binom{m-1}{m-u} \frac{\lambda^{u+k}}{u+k} T_{m-u} \\ &= m \binom{m+k}{m} \sum_{u=1}^m (-1)^{u-1} \binom{m-1}{m-u} \frac{\lambda^{u+k}}{u+k} T_{m-u}. \end{aligned}$$

These two forms may be more suitable than the first form of the solution. Other forms could also be obtained.

FIBONACCI NUMBERS IN TREE COUNTS FOR MAXIMAL OUTERPLANE AND RELATED GRAPHS

DAVID W. BANGE*

University of Wisconsin, La Crosse, WI 54601

ANTHONY E. BARKAUSKAS*

University of Wisconsin, La Crosse, WI 54601

PETER J. SLATER†

Sandia Laboratories, Albuquerque, NM 87115

ABSTRACT

Let G denote a plane multigraph that is obtained from a maximal outerplane graph by adding a collection of multiedges. We associate with each such G an M -tree (a tree in which some vertices are designated as type M), and we observe that many such graphs can be associated with the same M -tree. Formulas for counting spanning trees are given and are used to generate some Fibonacci identities. The path P_n is shown to be the tree on n vertices whose associated graph has the maximum number of spanning trees, and a class of trees on n vertices whose associated graph yields the minimum is conjectured.

1. INTRODUCTION

The occurrence of Fibonacci numbers in spanning tree counts has been noted by many authors ([5], [6], [7], [8], [9], and [10]). In particular, the labeled fan on $n + 2$ vertices has F_{2n+2} spanning trees, where F_n denotes the n th Fibonacci number. The fan is actually a special case of the class of maximal outerplane graphs. In [11] it is shown that any labeled maximal outerplane graph on $n + 2$ vertices with exactly two vertices of degree 2 also has F_{2n+2} spanning trees. In [1] the unifying concept of the "associated tree of a maximal outerplane graph" is presented; it is shown that Fibonacci numbers occur naturally in the count of spanning trees of these graphs and depend upon the structure of the associated trees.

The purpose of this paper is to extend the idea of the associated tree to maximal outerplane graphs with multiple edges, to give formulas for counting spanning trees, and to generate Fibonacci identities. In the final section, bounds are given on the number of spanning trees of any maximal outerplane graph on $n + 2$ vertices.

The associated tree T of a maximal outerplane graph G is simply the "inner dual" of G ; that is, T is the graph formed by constructing the usual dual G^* and deleting the vertex in the infinite region of G . In [2] it is shown that all labeled maximal outerplane graphs that have the same associated tree have the same number of labeled spanning trees. When multiple edges are allowed in the maximal outerplane graph, the above construction can be carried out, but vertices of degree 1 or 2 in T can result from either vertices of degree 2 or 3 in G^* .

To avoid this ambiguity, we shall adopt the following convention in constructing T : place a vertex of "type R " in any interior region of G bounded by

*This work was supported in part by an Institutional Research Grant from the University of Wisconsin-La Crosse.

†This work was supported in part by the U.S. Energy Research and Development Administration (ERDA) under Contract No. AT(29-1)-789. The publisher of this article acknowledges the U.S. Government's right to retain a nonexclusive, royalty-free license in and to any copyright covering this paper.

three edges and a vertex of "type M " in any interior region by a pair of multi-edges. We shall call a tree that contains any vertices of type M an M -tree. Figure 1 gives examples of some graphs with their associated trees and M -trees in which circles denote vertices of type M .

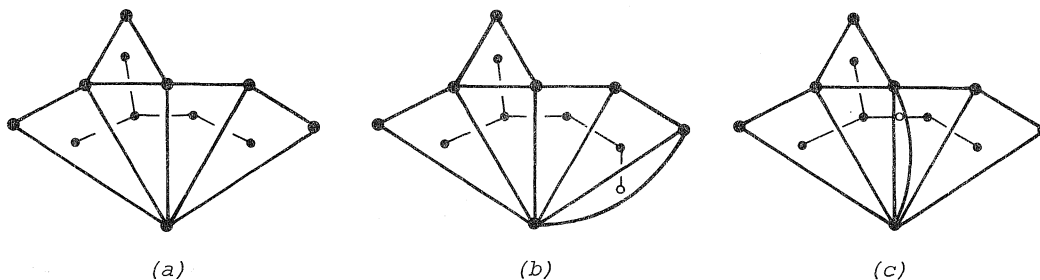


Fig. 1. Some graphs with associated trees and M -trees

If T is a tree (respectively, an M -tree), $G(T)$ will denote a maximal outerplane graph (respectively, a multigraph) associated with T . Note that there may be many nonisomorphic graphs (or multigraphs) associated with T , but that each has the same number of labeled spanning trees (STs). Consequently, we can let $ST\ G(T)$ denote this number. We emphasize that we are considering the edges of $G(T)$ to be labeled. For example, for the graph G_1 in Figure 2, there are 12 labeled spanning trees: four containing e_1 , four containing e_2 , and four that do not contain e_1 or e_2 .

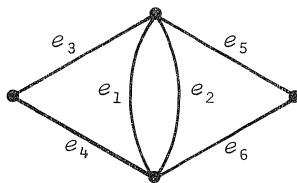


Fig. 2. A labeled multigraph G_1

It will be convenient to have a notation for some useful M -trees. As usual, P_n will denote the path with n vertices. Let $P_n^{(i)}$ denote the M -tree obtained from P_n by adjoining a path of i vertices of type M at an endpoint of P_n . A path P_n to which is attached a path of i type M vertices at one end and a path of j such vertices at the other end will be denoted $P_n^{(i,j)}$. The M -tree consisting of $P_n^{(1)}$ with P_m adjoined at the type M vertex will be denoted $P_{n,m}^{(0)}$. The M -tree constructed by adjoining a path of i vertices of type M at the $(n+1)$ st vertex of P_{n+m+1} will be denoted $P_{n,m}^{(i)}$. Figure 3 shows $P_3^{(2)}$, $P_3^{(2,1)}$, $P_{2,3}^{(0)}$, and $P_{3,4}^{(2)}$.

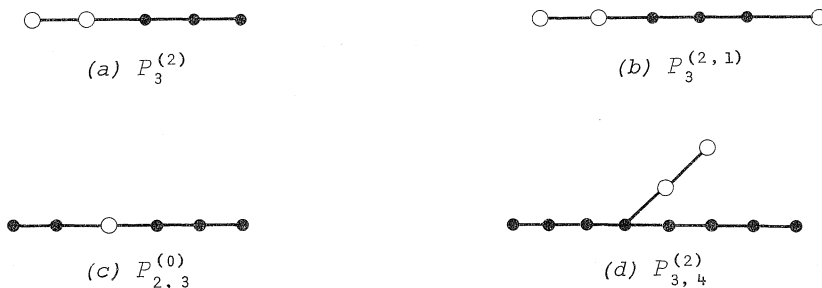


Fig. 3. Some M -trees

2. TREE COUNTS AND FIBONACCI IDENTITIES

As mentioned in the previous section, it is known that

$$\text{ST } G(P_n) = F_{2n+2}. \quad (2.1)$$

It is also known that Fibonacci numbers give the count of spanning trees of maximal outerplane graphs associated with the M -trees $P_n^{(1)}$ and $P_n^{(1,1)}$; namely,

$$\text{ST } G(P_n^{(1)}) = F_{2n+3} \quad (2.2)$$

and

$$\text{ST } G(P_n^{(1,1)}) = F_{2n+4}. \quad (2.3)$$

Counting the spanning trees of a graph G is often done with a basic reduction formula which sums those that contain a given edge e of G and those that do not (as in [3, p. 33]):

$$\text{ST } G = \text{ST } G \cdot e + \text{ST}(G - \{e\}), \quad (2.4)$$

where $G \cdot e$ denotes the graph obtained by identifying the end vertices of e , and removing the self-loops. This reduction performed on $G(P_n)$ at an edge containing a vertex of degree 2 demonstrates the basic Fibonacci equation

$$F_n = F_{n-1} + F_{n-2}. \quad (2.5)$$

Repeated applications of the reduction (2.4) will give recurrences leading to several well-known identities. For example,

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ST } G(P_n) &= \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}^{(1)}) = \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}^{(1)}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}^{(1)}) \\ &= \text{ST } G(P_1) + \text{ST } G(P_1^{(1)}) + \text{ST } G(P_2^{(1)}) + \cdots + \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}^{(1)}), \end{aligned}$$

which, from (2.2) gives

$$F_{2n+2} = F_1 + F_3 + \cdots + F_{2n+1} \quad (2.6)$$

since $\text{ST } G(P_1) = 3 = F_1 + F_3$.

The corresponding identity for the odd Fibonacci numbers

$$F_{2n+3} = 1 + F_2 + F_4 + \cdots + F_{2n+2} \quad (2.7)$$

follows from a similar recurrence developed by applying (2.4) to a multiple edge of $G(P_n^{(1)})$.

As another example, consider the recurrence obtained by starting again with $G(P_n)$ and alternating use of (2.4) on the resulting graphs of $G(P_k)$ and $G(P_k^{(1)})$:

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ST } G(P_n) &= \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}^{(1)}) = \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}^{(1)}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}^{(1)}) \\ &= \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}^{(1)}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}^{(1)}) \\ &= \text{ST } G(P_{n-1}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}^{(1)}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-2}) + \text{ST } G(P_{n-3}^{(1)}) + \cdots \\ &\quad + \text{ST } G(P_1^{(1)}) + \text{ST } G(P_1) + \text{ST } G(P_1^{(1)}). \end{aligned}$$

Since $\text{ST } G(P_1^{(1)}) = F_5 = F_3 + F_2 + F_1 + 1$, this reduction yields the identity

$$F_{2n+2} = F_{2n} + F_{2n-1} + \cdots + F_2 + F_1 + 1.$$

The parallel identity

$$F_{2n+3} = F_{2n+1} + F_{2n} + \cdots + F_2 + F_1 + 1$$

can be obtained by beginning with $G(P_n^{(1)})$, and we then have the general identity

$$F_n = F_{n-2} + F_{n-3} + \cdots + F_1 + 1. \quad (2.8)$$

Other spanning tree counts that we shall find useful later can be obtained readily from (2.1), (2.2), and the reduction formula (2.4) applied at the appropriate edge:

$$\text{ST } G(P_{h,k}^{(0)}) = F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1} \quad (2.9)$$

$$\text{and} \quad \text{ST } G(P_{h,k}^{(j)}) = F_{2h+2k+4} + j(F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1}). \quad (2.10)$$

Each of these counts has been discovered by other means [5].

3. FURTHER TREE COUNTING FORMULAS AND FIBONACCI IDENTITIES

A second reduction formula for counting spanning trees is useful for any 2-connected graph G with cut-set $\{u, v\}$. Let $G = H \cup K$, where $H \cap K = \{u, v\}$ and each of H and K has at least one vertex other than u or v . [Any edge (u, v) may be arbitrarily assigned either to H or to K .] Then

$$\text{ST } G = [\text{ST } H][\text{ST } K \cdot (u, v)] + [\text{ST } K][\text{ST } H \cdot (u, v)], \quad (3.1)$$

where $K \cdot (u, v)$ means graph G with vertices u and v identified. To see this, we observe that a spanning tree of G contains exactly one path between u and v . Since G is 2-connected, we may first count all the ways that this path lies entirely in H and add the ways that it lies entirely in K .

If this formula is applied to the maximal outerplane graph whose associated tree is the path P_{h+k} , we have

$$\text{ST } G(P_{h+k}) = [\text{ST } G(P_h)] [\text{ST } G(P_{k-1}^{(1)})] + [\text{ST } G(P_{k-1})] [\text{ST } G(P_{h-1}^{(1)})],$$

or using (2.1) and (2.2), we obtain

$$F_{2h+2k+2} = F_{2h+2}F_{2k+1} + F_{2k}F_{2h+1}, \quad (3.2)$$

which appears in [8]. A similar application on $G(P_{h+k}^{(1)})$ and use of (2.1), (2.1), and (2.3) gives

$$F_{2h+2k+3} = F_{2h+2}F_{2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1}. \quad (3.3)$$

Combining (3.2) and (3.3) will produce the general identity

$$F_n = F_{j+1}F_{n-j} + F_jF_{n-j-1}, \quad 1 \leq j \leq n-1. \quad (3.4)$$

The next identity will be obtained by counting the spanning trees of a graph $G(T)$ in two ways. Let S be the tree formed by joining paths of lengths j , h , and k to a vertex w (see Fig. 4). The first computation of $\text{ST } G(S)$ is obtained by applying (3.1) to $S = H \cup K$, where $H = G(P_h \cup \{w\} \cup P_k)$, and using (2.9) to get

$$\text{ST } G(S) = F_{2h+2k+4}F_{2j+1} + F_{2j}[F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1}]. \quad (3.5)$$

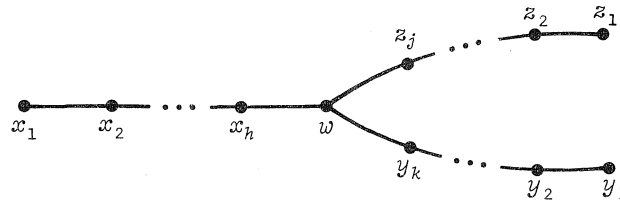


Fig. 4. The tree S

The second count is obtained by applying the reduction formula (2.4) successively to the exterior edges of $G(S)$ associated with vertices z_j, z_{j-1}, \dots, z_1 and using (2.10) to get

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ST } G(S) = & F_{2h+2k+4}F_{2j} + [F_{2h+2k+4} + 1(F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1})]F_{2j-2} \\ & + [F_{2h+2k+4} + 2(F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1})]F_{2j-4} + \dots \\ & + [F_{2h+2k+4} + (j-1)(F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1})]F_2 \\ & + [F_{2h+2k+4} + j(F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1})] \cdot 1. \end{aligned}$$

Collecting terms and using identity (2.7) we have

$$\text{ST } G(S) = F_{2h+2k+4}F_{2j+1} + \left[\sum_{r=1}^{j-1} rF_{2j-2r} + j \right] [F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1}]. \quad (3.6)$$

Equating (3.5) and (3.6) produces the identity

$$F_{2j} - j = \sum_{r=1}^{j-1} rF_{2j-2r}. \quad (3.7)$$

A corresponding formula for odd Fibonacci numbers can be obtained by starting with the multi-tree consisting of tree S with a vertex of type M attached at Z_1 :

$$F_{2j+1} - 1 = \sum_{r=1}^{j-1} rF_{2j-2r+1}. \quad (3.8)$$

The identity (3.8) appears in [9], but we think that (3.7) may be new.

4. BOUNDS ON $\text{ST } G(T_n)$

The reduction formula (3.1) can also be used to derive a formula for "moving a branch path" in an associated tree T . Let w be a vertex of degree 3 in T with subtrees T_1 , P_h , and P_k attached as in Figure 5(a). Let T' be the tree with path P_k "moved" as in Figure 5(b). Then the following formula holds

$$\text{ST } G(T') = \text{ST } G(T) + \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)]F_{2h}F_{2k}, \quad (4.1)$$

where (u, v) is the edge in $G(T)$ separating vertices z and w . To see this, apply the reduction (3.1) to $G(T)$ and $G(T')$ with subgraphs

$$H = G(P_h \cup \{w\} \cup P_k) \quad \text{and} \quad K = G(T_1) = (u, v).$$

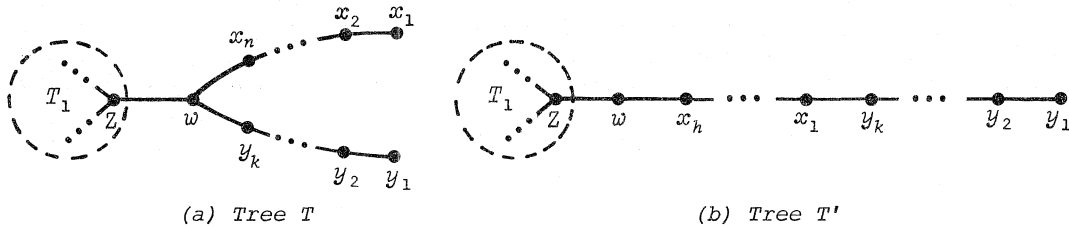


Fig. 5

For the graph $G(T)$ we have

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ST } G(T) &= F_{2h+2k+4} \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)] \cdot (u, v) \\ &\quad + \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)] [F_{2h+2k+2} + F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1}], \end{aligned}$$

where we have used (2.9). For the graph $G(T')$ we have

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ST } G(T') &= F_{2h+2k+4} \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)] \cdot (u, v) \\ &\quad + \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)] F_{2h+2k+3}. \end{aligned}$$

Subtracting these equations gives us




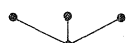
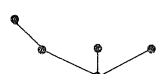

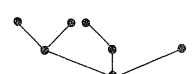



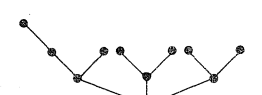
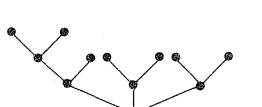
$$\begin{aligned} \text{ST } G(T') - \text{ST } G(T) &= \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)] [F_{2h+2k+1} - F_{2h+1}F_{2k+1}] \\ &= \text{ST}[G(T_1) - (u, v)] F_{2h}F_{2k} \end{aligned}$$

by (3.4).

As a corollary to (4.1) we have an upper bound on $\text{ST } G(T)$: if T_n is a tree with maximum degree of a vertex equal to three, then $\text{ST } G(T_n) < \text{ST } G(P_n)$.

To form a class of trees U_n whose associated maximal outerplane graph has the minimum number of spanning trees, it seems reasonable that U_n should be as "far" from P_n as possible. We conjecture that the trees U_n have the form given in Table 1.

Table 1

| n | U_n | ST $G(U_n)$ | ST $G(P_n) = F_{2n+2}$ |
|-----|---|-------------|------------------------|
| 1 |  | 3 | 3 |
| 2 |  | 8 | 8 |
| 3 |  | 21 | 21 |
| 4 |  | 54 | 55 |
| 5 |  | 141 | 144 |
| 6 |  | 360 | 377 |
| 7 |  | 939 | 987 |
| 8 |  | 2,394 | 2,584 |
| 9 |  | 6,237 | 6,765 |
| 10 |  | 15,876 | 17,711 |
| 11 |  | 41,391 | 46,368 |
| 12 |  | 105,462 | 121,393 |

The construction of the U_n can be described as follows. Let the vertex of U_1 be labeled v_1 . To form U_{n+1} from U_n for $n \geq 2$, join a vertex v_{n+1} of degree 1 to U_n so that v_{n+1} is adjacent to v_i , where i is the smallest possible index subject to the requirement that all vertices of U_{n+1} have degree 3 or less.

The values for ST $G(U_n)$ in Table 1 were computed using the fact that if U_n^* is the dual of $G(U_n)$, then ST $G(U_n) = \text{ST } U_n^*$. By standard tree counting methods

$$\text{ST } U_n^* = \det(A_f A_f^t) = |a_{ij}|,$$

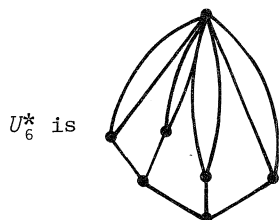
where A_f is the reduced incidence matrix of U_n^* . By labeling the vertices and

edges of U_n^* consecutively from left to right and bottom to top, all the a_{ij} are zero except that

$$a_{ii} = 3, a_{12} = a_{21} = 1$$

$$a_{i, 2i+1} = a_{2i+1, i} = 1, a_{i, 2i+2} = a_{2i+2, i} = 1.$$

For example, with $n = 6$,



and $ST U_6^* =$

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 3 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 3 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 3 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 3 \end{vmatrix}.$$

REFERENCES

1. D. W. Bange, A. E. Barkauskas, & P. J. Slater. "Maximal Outerplanar Graphs and Their Associated Trees." Submitted for publication.
2. D. W. Bange, A. E. Barkauskas, & P. J. Slater. "Using Associated Trees to Count the Spanning Trees of Labelled Maximal Outerplanar Graphs." *Proc. of the Eighth S. E. Conference on Combinatorics, Graph Theory, and Computing*, February 1977.
3. J. A. Bondy & U. S. R. Murty. *Graph Theory with Applications*. New York: American Elsevier, 1976.
4. N. K. Bose, R. Feick, & F. K. Sun. "General Solution to the Spanning Tree Enumeration Problem in Multigraph Wheels." *IEEE Transactions on Circuit Theory* CT-20 (1973):69-70.
5. D. C. Fielder. "Fibonacci Numbers in Tree Counts for Sector and Related Graphs." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 12 (1974):355-359.
6. F. Harary, P. O'Neil, R. C. Read, & A. J. Schwenk. "The Number of Spanning Trees in a Wheel." *Combinatorics* (Proc. Conf. Combinatorial Math., Math. Inst., Oxford, 1972), pp. 155-163.
7. A. J. W. Hilton. "The Number of Spanning Trees of Labelled Wheels, Fans and Baskets." *Combinatorics* (Proc. Conf. Combinatorial Math., Math. Inst., Oxford, 1972), pp. 203-206.
8. A. J. W. Hilton. "Spanning Trees and Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 12 (1974):259-262.
9. B. R. Meyers. "On Spanning Trees, Weighted Compositions, Fibonacci Numbers and Resistor Networks." *SIAM Review* 17 (1975):465-474.
10. J. Sedlacek. "Lucas Numbers in Graph Theory." (Czech.-English summary) *Mathematics* (Geometry and Graph Theory), Univ. Karlova, Prague, 1970, pp. 111-115.
11. P. J. Slater. "Fibonacci Numbers in the Count of Spanning Trees." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 15 (1977):11-14.

A NEW ANGLE ON THE GEOMETRY OF THE FIBONACCI NUMBERS

DUANE W. DeTEMPLE

Washington State University, Pullman, WA 99164

The "angle" we have in mind is a *gnomon*, a planar region that has the general shape of a carpenter's square. At the time of Pythagoras, a carpenter's square was in fact called a gnomon. The term came from Babylonia, where it originally referred to the vertically placed bar that cast the shadow on a sundial. The ancient Greeks also inherited a large body of algebra from the Babylonians, which they proceeded to recast into geometric terms. The gnomon became a recurrent figure in the Greek geometric algebra.

There are several reasons why Babylonian algebra was not adopted as it was, principally the discovery of irrationals: an irrational was acceptable to the Greeks as a length but not as a number. A secondary reason but, nevertheless, one of significance, was the Greek "delight in the tangible and visible" [2].

In this note we shall attempt to make the numbers $F_1 = 1$, $F_2 = 1$, $F_3 = 2$, ... in the Fibonacci sequence "tangible and visible" by representing each F_m with a gnomon. These figures will enable us geometrically to derive or interpret many of the standard identities for the Fibonacci numbers. The ideas work equally well for the Lucas numbers and other generalized Fibonacci number sequences.

The gnomons we shall associate with the Fibonacci numbers are depicted in Figure 1. The angular shape that represents the m th Fibonacci number will be called the F_m -gnomon. In particular, "observe" the $F_0 = 0$ -gnomon!

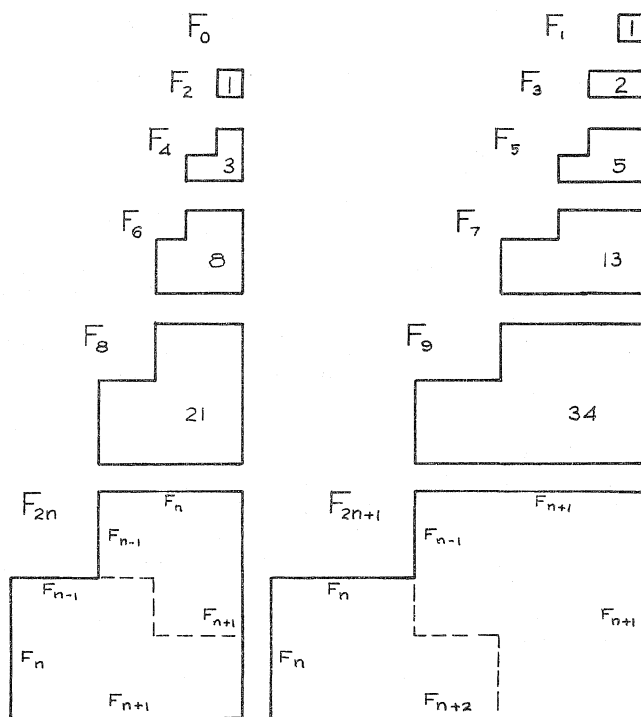


Fig. 1

The dashed lines in the lowermost gnomons indicate how the F_m - and F_{m+1} -gnomons can be combined to form the F_{m+2} -gnomon. This geometrically illustrates the basic recursion relation

$$F_{m+2} = F_{m+1} + F_m, m \geq 0. \quad (1)$$

The left-hand column of Figure 1 shows rather strikingly that the evenly indexed Fibonacci numbers are differences of squares of Fibonacci numbers. Indeed

$$F_{2n} = F_{n+1}^2 - F_{n-1}^2, n \geq 1. \quad (2)$$

Equally obvious from the right-hand column is the identity

$$F_{2n+1} = F_{n+1}^2 + F_n^2, n \geq 0. \quad (3)$$

Several other identities can be read off easily:

$$F_{2n+1} = F_{n-1}F_{n+1} + F_nF_{n+2}, n \geq 1; \quad (4)$$

$$F_{2n+1} = F_{n+2}F_{n+1} - F_nF_{n-1}, n \geq 1; \quad (5)$$

$$F_{2n} = F_{n-1}F_n + F_nF_{n+1}, n \geq 1. \quad (6)$$

Since $L_n = F_{n+1} + F_{n-1}$ is the n th Lucas number, it follows from (6) that

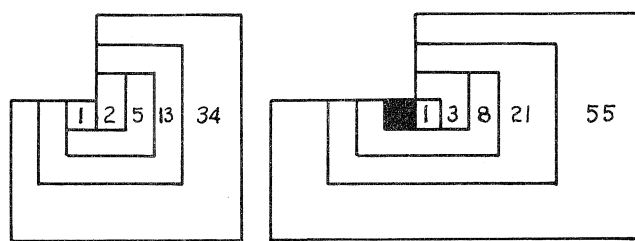
$$F_{2n} = L_n F_n, n \geq 1. \quad (7)$$

The gnomons in the left-hand column of Figure 1 can be superimposed in the manner shown in Figure 2(a). This shows how the F_{2n} -gnomon can be decomposed into "triple" gnomons of area $F_{2j} - F_{2j-2}$, $j = 1, \dots, n$. From identity (1), we already know $F_{2j-1} = F_{2j} - F_{2j-2}$, and so

$$F_1 + F_3 + \dots + F_{2n-1} = F_{2n}, n \geq 1. \quad (8)$$

In a similar manner (note the shaded unit square "hole") we see from Figure 2(b) that

$$F_2 + F_4 + \dots + F_{2n} = F_{2n+1} - 1, n \geq 1. \quad (9)$$



(a)

(b)

Fig.2

We have noted that the F_{m+2} -gnomon can be dissected into an F_{m+1} - and F_m -gnomon. The larger of these can, in turn, be dissected into an F_m - and F_{m-1} -gnomon, and the larger of these can then be dissected into an F_{m-1} - and F_{m-2} -gnomon. Continuing this process dissects the original F_{m+2} -gnomon into a spiral that consists of the F_j -gnomons, $j = 1, \dots, m$, together with an additional unit square (shown black), as illustrated in Figure 3. The separation of the gnomons into quadrants is rather unexpected.

From Figure 3,* we conclude that

$$F_1 + F_2 + \dots + F_m = F_{m+2} - 1, m \geq 0. \quad (10)$$

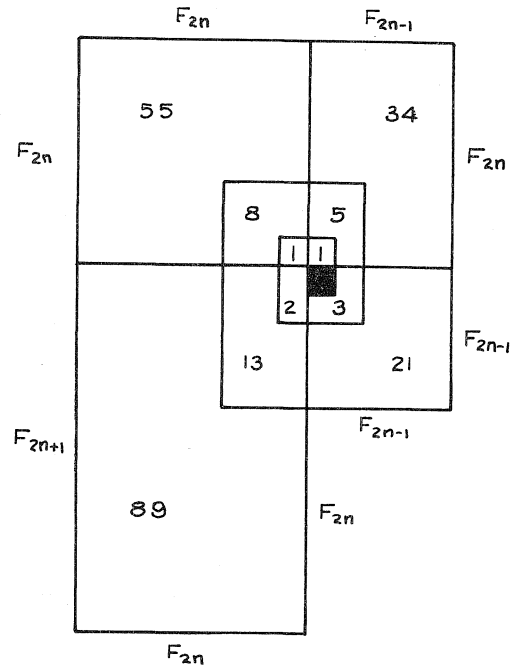


Fig. 3

Geometrically, we see that the first m Fibonacci gnomons can be combined with an additional unit square to form the F_{m+2} -gnomon. It is interesting to check this out successively for the special cases $m = 0, 1, 2, \dots$.

The spiral pattern gives rise to additional identities. For example, by adding the areas of the gnomons in the first quadrant, we find

$$F_1 + F_5 + \dots + F_{4n-3} = F_{2n-1}F_{2n}, \quad n \geq 1. \quad (11)$$

The same procedure for the other three quadrants yields:

$$F_2 + F_6 + \dots + F_{4n-2} = F_{2n}^2, \quad n \geq 1; \quad (12)$$

$$F_3 + F_7 + \dots + F_{4n-1} = F_{2n}F_{2n+1}, \quad n \geq 1; \quad (13)$$

$$F_4 + F_8 + \dots + F_{4n} = F_{2n+1}^2 - 1, \quad n \geq 1. \quad (14)$$

The gnomons in the first quadrant are each a sum of two squares. (Some additional horizontal segments can be imagined in Figure 3.) We see that

$$F_1^2 + F_2^2 + \dots + F_{2n-1}^2 = F_{2n-1}F_{2n}, \quad n \geq 1. \quad (15)$$

Similarly, the third quadrant demonstrates

$$F_1^2 + F_2^2 + \dots + F_{2n}^2 = F_{2n}F_{2n+1}, \quad n \geq 1. \quad (16)$$

Of course, identities (15) and (16) are more commonly written simultaneously in the form

$$F_1^2 + F_2^2 + \dots + F_m^2 = F_m F_{m+1}, \quad m \geq 1. \quad (17)$$

Next, consider the F_{2n-1} by F_{2n+1} rectangle that the spiral covers in the right half-plane. Evidently, the area of this rectangle is one unit more than

the area of the F_{2n} by F_{2n} square covered by the spiral in the third quadrant. Thus

$$F_{2n-1}F_{2n+1} = F_{2n}^2 + 1, n \geq 1. \quad (18)$$

An analogous consideration of the F_{2n} by F_{2n+2} rectangle covered by the spiral in the left half-plane shows

$$F_{2n}F_{2n+2} = F_{2n+1}^2 - 1, n \geq 1. \quad (19)$$

The black square at the center of the spiral plays an interesting role in the geometric derivation of these relations.

The geometric approach used above can be extended easily to deal with generalized Fibonacci sequences $T_1 = p$, $T_2 = q$, $T_3 = p+q$, $T_4 = p+2q$, ..., where p and q are positive integers. The T_m -gnomons can be taken as shown in Figure 4 (however, it should be mentioned that other gnomon shapes can be adopted, and will do just as well).

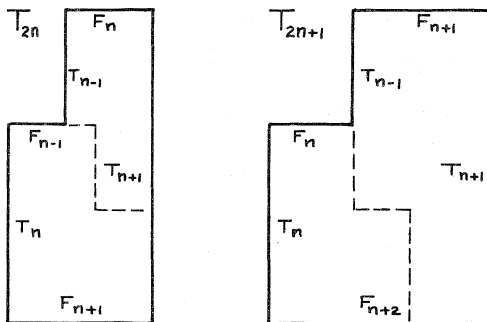


Fig. 4

From Figure 4, it is clear that

$$T_{m+2} = T_{m+1} + T_m, m \geq 1; \quad (20)$$

$$T_{2n} = T_{n-1}F_n + T_nF_{n+1}, n \geq 1; \quad (21)$$

$$T_{2n+1} = T_nF_n + T_{n+1}F_{n+1}, n \geq 1. \quad (22)$$

As before, a spiral pattern can be obtained readily. Figure 5 shows the spiral that corresponds to the Lucas sequence $L_1 = 1$, $L_2 = 3$, $L_3 = 4$, $L_4 = 7$, ..., where $p = 1$ and $q = 3$.

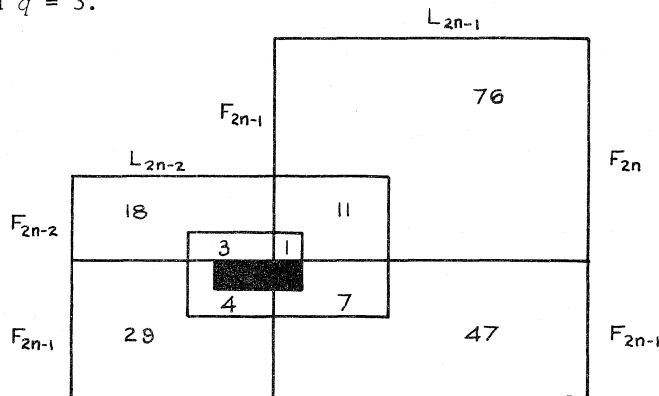


Fig. 5

It is clear from Figure 5 that

$$L_1 + L_2 + \cdots + L_m = L_{m+2} - 3, m \geq 1. \quad (23)$$

For the generalized sequence, one would find

$$T_1 + T_2 + \cdots + T_m = T_{m+2} - q, m \geq 1. \quad (24)$$

Beginning with a $q \times 1$ (black) rectangle, one can use identity (24) successively for $m = 1, 2, \dots$ to generate T_m -gnomons. A variety of identities for generalized Fibonacci numbers can be observed and discovered by mimicking the procedures followed earlier.

It seems appropriate to conclude with a remark of Brother Alfred Brousseau: "It appears that there is a considerable wealth of enrichment and discovery material in the general area of Fibonacci numbers as related to geometry" [1]. Additional geometry of Fibonacci numbers can be found in Bro. Alfred's article.

REFERENCES

1. Brother Alfred Brousseau. "Fibonacci Numbers and Geometry." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 10 (1972):303-318.
2. B. L. van der Waerden. *Science Awakening*, p. 125. New York: Oxford University Press, 1961.

FIBONACCI AND LUCAS CUBES

J. C. LAGARIAS

Bell Telephone Laboratories, Murray Hill, NJ 07974

D. P. WEISSER

University of California, Berkeley, CA 94704

1. INTRODUCTION

The Fibonacci numbers are defined by the well-known recursion formulas

$$F_0 = 0, F_1 = 1, F_n = F_{n-1} + F_{n-2}$$

and the Lucas numbers by

$$L_0 = 2, L_1 = 1, L_n = L_{n-1} + L_{n-2}.$$

J. H. E. Cohn [2] determined the Fibonacci and Lucas numbers that are perfect squares. R. Finkelstein and H. London [3] gave a rather complicated determination of the cubes in the Fibonacci and Lucas sequences. Diophantine equations whose solutions must be Fibonacci and Lucas cubes occur in C. L. Siegel's proof [7] of H. M. Stark's result that there are exactly nine complex quadratic fields of class number one. This paper presents a simple determination of all Fibonacci numbers F_n of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$ and all Lucas numbers L_n of the form $2^a X^3$.

2. PRELIMINARY REDUCTIONS

From the recursion formulas defining the Fibonacci and Lucas numbers, it is easily verified by induction that the sequence of residues of F_n and $L_n \pmod{p}$ are periodic, and in particular that

$$2 \mid F_n \text{ iff } 3 \mid n \quad (1)$$

$$2 \mid L_n \text{ iff } 3 \mid n \quad (2)$$

$$3 \mid F_n \text{ iff } 4 \mid n \quad (3)$$

$$3|L_n \text{ iff } n \equiv 2 \pmod{4} \quad (4)$$

$$5 \nmid L_n \quad (5)$$

$$7|L_n \text{ iff } n \equiv 4 \pmod{8} \quad (6)$$

If $\varepsilon_0 = \frac{1+\sqrt{5}}{2}$ and $\bar{\varepsilon}_0 = \frac{1-\sqrt{5}}{2}$, it is also easily verified by induction that:

$$\varepsilon_n = \frac{L_n + F_n\sqrt{5}}{2}, \quad F_n = \frac{1}{\sqrt{5}}(\varepsilon_0^n - \bar{\varepsilon}_0^n), \quad L_n = \varepsilon_0^n + \bar{\varepsilon}_0^n.$$

From these formulas, the following identities are easily derived:

$$5F_n^2 - L_n^2 = 4(-1)^{n+1} \quad (7)$$

$$F_{2n} = F_n L_n \quad (8)$$

$$4F_{3n} = F_n(5F_n^2 + 3L_n^2) \quad (9)$$

$$4L_{3n} = L_n(15F_n^2 + L_n^2) \quad (10)$$

Further, from (1), (2), and (7), we find that

$$(F_n, L_n) = \begin{cases} 2 & \text{if } 3|n \\ 1 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \quad (11)$$

Finally, since $F_n = (-1)^n F_{-n}$ and $L_n = (-1)^n L_{-n}$, it suffices to consider the case $n > 0$ in what follows.

The identity (7) is the basis of a reduction of the determination of Fibonacci or Lucas cubes (or, more generally, Fibonacci and Lucas P th powers) to solving particular Diophantine equations. It turns out that this identity actually characterizes Fibonacci and Lucas numbers, in the sense that (L_{2n}, F_{2n}) for $n > 0$ is the complete set of positive solutions to the Diophantine equation $X^2 - 5Y^2 = 4$, and (L_{2n+1}, F_{2n+1}) for $n \geq 0$ is the complete set of positive solutions to the Diophantine equation $X^2 - 5Y^2 = -4$. From these facts, it follows that the positive Fibonacci cubes are exactly those positive Y^3 for which $X^2 - 5Y^6 = \pm 4$ is solvable in integers, and the positive Lucas cubes are those positive X^3 for which $X^6 - 5Y^2 = \pm 4$ is solvable in integers. For our purposes, it suffices to know only that (7) holds, so that the Fibonacci and Lucas cubes are a subset of the solutions of these Diophantine equations.

We now show that the addition formulas (8)-(10) can be used to relate Fibonacci numbers of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$ to those of the form X^3 , and Lucas numbers of the form $2^a X^3$ to those of the form X^3 .

Lemma 1: (i) If F_{2n} is of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$, so is F_n .
(ii) If F_{3n} is of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$, so is F_n .
(iii) If L_{3n} is of the form $2^a X^3$, so is L_n .

Proof: (i) follows from (8) and (11). (ii) follows from (9) and (11), where we note that $(F_n, 3L_n^2) | 12$. Finally, (iii) follows from (10), (11), and (5), noting that $(L_n, 15F_n^2) | 12$.

Lemma 2: (i) If $F_n = 2^a 3^b X^3$ and $n = 2^c 3^d k$ with $(6, k) = 1$, then $F_k = Z^3$.
(ii) If $L_n = 2^a X^3$ and $n = 3^d k$ with $(3, k) = 1$, then $L_k = Z^3$.

Proof: For (i), note that F_k is of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$ by repeated application of Lemma 1, while $(F_k, 6) = 1$ by (1) and (3), so $F_k = Z^3$. (ii) has a similar proof using (2).

Remark: The preceding two lemmas are both valid in the more general case where "cube" is replaced by "Pth power" throughout, using the same proofs.

3. MAIN RESULTS

Theorem 1: The only F_n with $(n, 6) = 1$ that are cubes are $F_1 = 1$ and $F_{-1} = -1$.

Proof: Let $F_n = Z^3$ and note that $(n, 6) = 1$ and (1) and (7) yield

$$5Z^6 - 4 = L_n^2 \quad \text{and} \quad (2, Z) = 1. \quad (12)$$

Setting $X = 5Z^2$ and $Y = 5L_n$ yields

$$X^3 - 100 = Y^2 \quad (13)$$

and (2) and (4) require $(Y, 6) = 1$. We examine (13) over the ring of integers of $Q(\sqrt[3]{10})$. It has been shown (see [6] and [8]) that this ring has unique factorization, that its members are exactly those $(1/3)(A + B\sqrt[3]{10} + C\sqrt[3]{100})$ where A, B , and C are integers with $A \equiv B \equiv C \pmod{3}$, and that the units in this ring are of the form $\pm \varepsilon^k$ where $\varepsilon = (1/3)(23 + 11\sqrt[3]{10} + 5\sqrt[3]{100})$. Equation (13) factors as

$$(X - \sqrt[3]{100})(X^2 + \sqrt[3]{100}X + 10\sqrt[3]{10}) = Y^2. \quad (14)$$

Write

$$X - \sqrt[3]{100} = \eta\alpha^2, \quad (15)$$

where η is square free and divides both $X - \sqrt[3]{100}$ and $X^2 + \sqrt[3]{100}X + 10\sqrt[3]{10}$. Then

$$\eta | (X^2 + \sqrt[3]{100}X + 10\sqrt[3]{10}) - (X + 2\sqrt[3]{100})(X - \sqrt[3]{100}) = 30\sqrt[3]{10}.$$

Since $(Y, 3) = 1$, $(\eta, 3) = 1$, and $\eta | 10\sqrt[3]{10}$. Now $(\sqrt[3]{10})^3 = 2 \cdot 5$ and $(2, 5) = 1$, so by unique factorization we can find Δ and Φ such that $\sqrt[3]{10} = \Delta\Phi$, $5 = \Delta^3\varepsilon^k$, and $2 = \Phi^3\varepsilon^{-k}$. Then $\eta | 10\sqrt[3]{10} = \Delta^4\Phi^4$. Now $Y = 5L_n$ and $(2, L_n) = 1$ by (2), so (14) shows that $(\Phi, X - \sqrt[3]{100}) = 1$. Hence $\eta | \Delta^4$. But $5 | X$, so $\Delta^3 | X$, and hence $\Delta^2 || X - \sqrt[3]{100}$. Since η is square free, η must be a unit. By absorbing squares of units into α , we need only consider $\eta = \pm 1$ and $\eta = \pm \varepsilon$ in (15).

Case 1: $X - \sqrt[3]{100} = \pm\alpha^2$. Let $\alpha = (1/3)(A + B\sqrt[3]{10} + C\sqrt[3]{100})$. Since representation of integers in this form is unique.

$$X = \pm \frac{1}{9}(A^2 + 20BC) \quad (16)$$

$$0 = \pm \frac{1}{9}(2AB + 10C^2) \quad (17)$$

$$-1 = \pm \frac{1}{9}(B^2 + 2AC) \quad (18)$$

Equation (17) shows $B | 5C^2$. Squaring (18) and multiplying both sides by $3^4 \cdot 5$, we see that B divides each term on the right side so $B | 3^4 \cdot 5$. For each of the twenty values of B satisfying $B | 3^4 \cdot 5$, we can solve (17) and (18) for A and C , and verify the only integer solutions (A, B, C) are $(-5, 1, 1)$ and $(5, -1, -1)$ when $\eta = 1$, and $(0, \pm 3, 0)$ when $\eta = -1$. Evaluating X by (16) we find that the first two solutions yield $Z = \pm 1$ in (12), and thus $F_1 = 1$ and $F_{-1} = -1$, while the third solution is extraneous to (13).

Case 2: $X - \sqrt[3]{100} = \pm\varepsilon\alpha^2$. Proceeding as in Case 1, we obtain

$$X = \pm \frac{1}{27}(23A^2 + 110B^2 + 500C^2 + 100AB + 220AC + 460BC) \quad (19)$$

$$0 = \pm \frac{1}{27}(11A^2 + 50B^2 + 230C^2 + 46AB + 100AC + 230BC) \quad (20)$$

$$-1 = \pm \frac{1}{27}(5A^2 + 23B^2 + 110C^2 + 22AB + 46AC + 100BC) \quad (21)$$

From (20) $2 | A$ so that $2 | X$ in (19), and such solutions are extraneous to (12).

Remark: It can be shown (see [1] and [3]) that the complete set of solutions (X, Y) to (13) is $(5, \pm 5)$, $(10, \pm 30)$, and $(34, \pm 198)$.

Theorem 2: The set of Fibonacci numbers F_n with $n > 0$ of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$ is $F_1 = 1$, $F_2 = 1$, $F_3 = 2$, $F_4 = 3$, $F_6 = 8$, and $F_{12} = 144$.

Proof: Let $F_n = 2^a 3^b X^3$ with $n = 2^c 3^d k$ and $(k, 6) = 1$. By Lemma 2, $F_k = Z^3$ and by Theorem 1, $k = 1$. If $c \geq 3$, repeated application of Lemma 1(ii) would show $F_8 = 21$ is of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$, which is false. If $d \geq 2$, repeated application of Lemma 1(i) would show $F_9 = 34$ is of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$, which is false. The values $0 \leq c \leq 2$ and $0 \leq d \leq 1$ give the stated solutions.

Theorem 3: The equation $L_{2n} = X^3$ has no solutions.

Proof: Suppose $L_{2n} = X^3$. Then (7) yields

$$5F_{2n}^2 + 4 = X^6.$$

All solutions to this equation (mod 7) require $7|X$. Then (6) shows $4|2n$ hence $3|F_{2n}$ by (2), so $X^6 \equiv 4 \pmod{9}$, which is impossible.

Theorem 4: The equation $L_n = X^3$ with $(n, 6) = 1$ has only the solutions $L_1 = 1$ and $L_{-1} = -1$.

Proof: Suppose $L_n = X^3$ with $(n, 6) = 1$. Then (2) and (7) yield

$$5F_n^2 - 4 = X^6 \quad \text{and} \quad (6, X) = 1. \quad (22)$$

We examine (22) over the ring of integers of $Q(\sqrt{5})$. It is known that this ring has unique factorization, that these integers are of the general form

$$\frac{1}{2}(A + B\sqrt{5})$$

with $A \equiv B \pmod{2}$, and that the units are of the form $\pm \epsilon_0^K$, where

$$\epsilon_0 = \frac{1}{2}(1 + \sqrt{5}).$$

Now (22) gives

$$(\sqrt{5}F_n + 2)(\sqrt{5}F_n - 2) = Z^3,$$

where $Z = X^2$. Then

$$\sqrt{5}F_n + 2 = \eta \alpha^3,$$

where η divides both $\sqrt{5}F_n + 2$ and $\sqrt{5}F_n - 2$. Then we have $\eta|4$. But $(2, Z) = 1$, so $(2, \sqrt{5}F_n + 2) = 1$ and η is a unit. By absorbing cubes of units, we need to consider only $\eta = 1, \epsilon_0$, and ϵ_0^{-1} .

Case 1: $2 + F_n\sqrt{5} = \alpha^3$. Let $\alpha = (1/2)(A + B\sqrt{5})$. Substituting this yields the equations

$$\begin{aligned} 2 &= \frac{1}{8}A(A^2 + 15B^2) \\ F_n &= \frac{1}{8}B(3A^2 + 5B^2). \end{aligned} \quad (23)$$

Then (23) shows that $A|16$ and $|B| \leq 1$, from which $A = 1$ and $B = \pm 1$ are the only solutions, yielding $F_n = \pm 1$ and, finally, $L_1 = 1$ and $L_{-1} = -1$.

Case 2: $2 + F_n\sqrt{5} = \epsilon_0 \alpha^3$. Let $\alpha = (1/2)(A + B\sqrt{5})$ with $A \equiv B \pmod{2}$, which yields

$$2 = \frac{1}{16}(A^3 + 15A^2B + 15AB^2 + 25B^3)$$

and

$$F_n = \frac{1}{16}(A^3 + 3A^2B + 15AB^2 + 5B^3).$$

Then

$$4(2 - F_n) = B(3A^2 + 5B^2) \equiv 4 \pmod{8},$$

because $2 \nmid F_n$ since $(n, 6) = 1$. This congruence has no solutions with $A \equiv B \pmod{2}$.

Case 3: $2 + F_n\sqrt{5} = \varepsilon_0^{-1}\alpha^3$. Noting $\varepsilon_0^{-1} = (1/2)(1 - \sqrt{5})$, we argue as in Case 2, using instead

$$4(2 + F_n) = -B(3A^2 + 5B^2) \equiv 4 \pmod{8},$$

which has no solutions with $A \equiv B \pmod{2}$.

Theorem 5: The set of Lucas numbers L_n with $n > 0$ of the form $2^a X^3$ are $L_1 = 1$ and $L_3 = 4$.

Proof: Let $L_n = 2^a X^3$ with $n = 3^e k$ and $(k, 3) = 1$. By Lemma 2, $L_k = X^3$ so by Theorems 3 and 4, $k = 1$. If $e \geq 2$, then Lemma 2(ii) would show $L_9 = 76$ was of the form $2^a X^3$, which is false.

Remark: The set of Lucas numbers of the form $2^a 3^b X^3$ leads to consideration of the equation $X^3 = Y^2 + 18$. The only solutions to this equation are $(3, \pm 3)$, but the available proofs (see [1] and [3]) are complicated. General methods for solving the equation $X^3 = Y^2 + K$ for fixed K are given in [1], [4], and [5].

REFERENCES

1. F.B. Coghlan & N.M. Stephens. "The Diophantine Equation $x^3 - y^2 = k$." In *Computers and Number Theory*, ed. by A. O. L. Atkin & B. J. Birch. London: Academic Press, 1971, pp. 199-206.
2. J. H. E. Cohn. "On Square Fibonacci Numbers." *J. London Math. Soc.* 39 (1964):537-540.
3. R. Finkelstein & H. London. "On Mordell's Equation $y^2 - k = x^3$." MR 49, #4928, Bowling Green State University, 1973.
4. O. Hemer. "On the Diophantine Equation $y^2 - k = x^3$." Almquist & Wiksalls, Uppsala 1952, MR 14, 354; *Ark. Mat.* 3 (1954):67-77, MR 15, 776.
5. W. Ljunggren. "On the Diophantine Equation $y^2 - k = x^3$." *Acta Arithmetica* 8 (1963):451-463.
6. E.K. Selmer. *Tables for the Purely Cubic Field $K(\sqrt[3]{m})$* . Oslo: Avhandlinger utgitte av det Norske Videnskapss, 1955.
7. C. L. Siegel. "Zum Beweise des Stark'schen Satzes." *Inventiones Math.* 5 (1968):180-191.
8. H. Wada. "A Table of Fundamental Units of Pure Cubic Fields." *Proceedings of the Japan Academy* 46 (1970):1135-1140.

THE NUMBER OF STATES IN A CLASS OF SERIAL QUEUEING SYSTEMS

MICHAEL J. MAGAZINE*

University of Waterloo, Waterloo, Ontario, Canada

ABSTRACT

It is shown that the number of states in a class of serial production or service systems with N servers is the $(2N - 1)$ st Fibonacci number. This has proved useful in designing efficient systems.

*This research was supported by National Research Council Grant No. A4142.

In studying queueing systems in series, it is useful to know precisely the number of different states that might occur. In particular, in [1], this number is crucial in determining approximate solutions to the allocation of a fixed resource to the individual servers or for scheduling servers with variable serving times. For a particular class of these problems, this number possesses an interesting property.

The system can be described in general as follows:

N (single-server) service facilities (usually corresponding to N work stations of a production line) are arranged in series. Customers completing service at station i proceed to station $i+1$ and commence service there if it is free, or join a queue if the server is busy. The limitation on space restricts the number who can wait before station i to be W_i . If service is completed at station i and the waiting space before station $i+1$ is full, then the customer completing service cannot advance and station i becomes "blocked." Any station that is idle is said to be "starved." Station 1 cannot be starved, as a customer is always ready for processing (raw materials) and station N can never be blocked. Customers are not permitted to renege (see Figure 1).

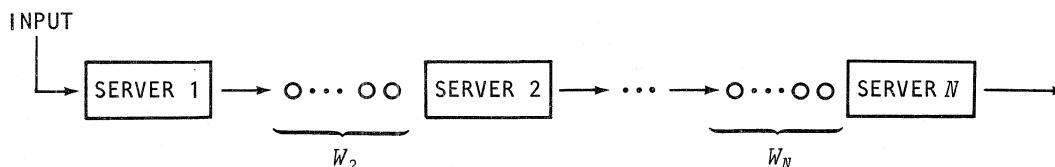


Fig. 1

The design problem is to consider how to divide the work among the N stations (or, equivalently, to determine the order of service) to maximize, among other objectives, the rate at which customers leave the system. The problem is complicated by having operation times that are not deterministic and are given only by a random variable. This optimization involves inverting a stochastic matrix whose dimension is the number of states in the system. Our problem here is to determine the number of possible states.

Without loss of generality, we can assume that $W_i = 0$, $i = 2, 3, \dots, N$, that is, there is no waiting space before each server. This is done by assuming each waiting space is another service station with 0 service time. Hence, each station can be busy (state 1), all but station 1 can be starved (state 0), and all but station N can be blocked (state b). An N -tuple of 1's, 0's, and b 's represents a state of the system. Obviously, not all combinations are allowed, for instance, a "b" must be followed by a "b" or a "1."

Theorem: Let S_N be the number of states when N servers are in series. Then $S_N = F_{2N-1}$.

Proof: When $N = 2$, the only possible states are (1, 1), (1, 0), (b, 1) and $S_2 = F_3 = 3$. Assume that $S_k = F_{2k-1}$. All possible states, when $N = k + 1$, can be generated from the S_k states as follows: catenate a "1" to the right of each of the S_k states [corresponding to the $(k+1)$ st server being busy]; catenate a "0" to the right of each of the S_k states; and, for each state with a "1" in the k th position, change this to a "b" and add a "1" in the $(k+1)$ st position. The states with the "1" in the k th position had been similarly generated from the S_{k-1} states. This leads to the recursive relationship

$$S_{k+1} = S_k + S_k + (S_{k-1} + \dots + S_1 + 1) = 2F_{2k-1} + \sum_{j=1}^{k-1} F_{2j-1} + F_0 = F_{2k+1}.$$

This result has been most useful in developing numerical procedures for calculating or approximating the probabilities that a server is busy, which is used in finding efficient designs for this class of production systems.

REFERENCE

1. M. J. Magazine & G. L. Silver. "Heuristics for Determining Output and Work Allocations in Series Flow Lines." *Int'l. J. Prod. Research* 16-3 (1978): 169-181.

THE DETERMINATION OF ALL DECADIC KAPREKAR CONSTANTS

G. D. PRICHETT, A. L. LUDINGTON, and J. F. LAPENTA

Babson College, Wellesley, MA 02157

0. INTRODUCTION

Choose a to be any r -digit integer expressed in base 10 with not all digits equal. Let a' be the integer formed by arranging these digits in descending order, and let a'' be the integer formed by arranging these digits in ascending order. Define $T(a) = a' - a''$. When $r = 3$, repeated applications of T to any starting value a will always lead to 495, which is self-producing under T , that is, $T(495) = 495$. Any r -digit integer exhibiting the properties that 495 exhibits in the 3-digit case will be called a "Kaprekar constant." It is well known (see [2]) that 6174 is such a Kaprekar constant in the 4-digit case.

In this paper we concern ourselves only with self-producing integers. After developing some general results which hold for any base g , we then characterize all decadic self-producing integers. From this it follows that the only r -digit Kaprekar constants are those given above for $r = 3$ and 4.

1. THE DIGITS OF $T(a)$

Let $r = 2n + \delta$, where

$$\delta = \begin{cases} 1 & r \text{ odd} \\ 0 & r \text{ even.} \end{cases}$$

Let a be an r -digit g -adic integer of the form

$$a = \alpha_{r-1}g^{r-1} + \alpha_{r-2}g^{r-2} + \dots + \alpha_1g + \alpha_0 \quad (1.1)$$

with

$$g > \alpha_{r-1} \geq \alpha_{r-2} \geq \dots \geq \alpha_1 \geq \alpha_0, \alpha_{r-1} > \alpha_0.$$

Let a' be the corresponding reflected integer

$$a' = \alpha_0g^{r-1} + \alpha_1g^{r-2} + \dots + \alpha_{r-2}g + \alpha_{r-1}. \quad (1.2)$$

The operation $T(a) = a - a'$ will give rise to a new r -digit integer (permitting leading zeros) whose digits can be arranged in descending and ascending order as in (1.1) and (1.2). Define

$$d_{n-i+1} = \alpha_{r-i} - \alpha_{i-1}, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n. \quad (1.3)$$

Thus associated with the integer a given in (1.1) is the n -tuple of differences $D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ with $g > d_n \geq d_{n-1} \geq \dots \geq d_1$. Note that $T(a)$ depends entirely upon the values of these differences. The digits of $T(a)$ are given by the following, viz.,

$$\delta = 0 \text{ and } d_1 \neq 0 \quad (1.4a)$$

$$d_n \ d_{n-1} \dots d_2 \ d_1 - 1 \ g - d_1 - 1 \ g - d_2 - 1 \dots g - d_{n-1} - 1 \ g - d_n$$

$$\delta = 0 \text{ and } d_1 = d_2 = \dots = d_{j-1} = 0, d_j \neq 0, 1 < j \leq n \quad (1.4b)$$

2(j-1) terms

$$d_n \ d_{n-1} \dots d_{j+1} \ d_j - 1 \ g - 1 \dots g - 1 \ g - d_j - 1 \dots g - d_{n-1} - 1 \ g - d_n$$

$$\delta = 1 \text{ and } d_1 \neq 0 \quad (1.4c)$$

$$d_n \ d_{n-1} \dots d_2 \ d_1 - 1 \ g - 1 \ g - d_1 - 1 \ g - d_2 - 1 \dots g - d_{n-1} - 1 \ g - d_n$$

$$\delta = 1 \text{ and } d_1 = d_2 = \dots = d_{j-1} = 0, d_j \neq 0, 1 < j \leq n \quad (1.4d)$$

2(j-1)+1 terms

$$d_n \ d_{n-1} \dots d_{j+1} \ d_j - 1 \ g - 1 \dots g - 1 \ g - d_j - 1 \dots g - d_{n-1} - 1 \ g - d_n$$

Differences $D' = (d'_n, d'_{n-1}, \dots, d'_1)$ can now be assigned to the integers $T(a)$ as in (1.3). We say that $(d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ is mapped to $(d'_n, d'_{n-1}, \dots, d'_1)$ under T .

2. PROPERTIES OF ONE-CYCLES

We shall focus attention on the determination of all a such that $T(a) = a$. Such integers are said to generate a one-cycle a . This is equivalent to finding all n -tuples $(d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ that are mapped to themselves under T .

Theorem 2.1: Suppose $(d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ represents a one-cycle with $d_j \neq 0$, $j \geq 1$, and $d_k = 0$ for $k < j$. Further suppose that $d_n \neq d_j$. Then

$$(i) \ d_n + d_j = g \quad \text{if } \delta = 1 \text{ or if } \delta = 0 \text{ and } j > 1,$$

or

$$(ii) \ \begin{cases} d_n + 2d_1 = g \\ \text{or} \\ d_n = g - 1, d_1 = 1 \end{cases} \quad \text{if } \delta = 0 \text{ and } j = 1$$

Proof: (i) Since either $j > 1$ or $\delta = 1$, (1.4a) does not apply. Thus the largest digit in $T(a)$ is $g - 1$. The smallest digit could be one of three:

$$\begin{cases} d_j - 1 & \text{if } d_j + d_n - 1 < g \\ g - d_n & \text{if } d_j + d_n - 1 \geq g, d_n \neq d_{n-1} \\ g - d_n - 1 & \text{if } d_j + d_n - 1 \geq g, d_n = d_{n-1}. \end{cases}$$

Therefore,

$$d'_n = \begin{cases} g - d_j & \text{if } d_j + d_n - 1 < g \\ d_n - 1 & \text{if } d_j + d_n - 1 \geq g, d_n \neq d_{n-1} \\ d_n & \text{if } d_j + d_n - 1 \geq g, d_n = d_{n-1}. \end{cases}$$

Since $d_n = d'_n$, if $d_j + d_n - 1 < g$, then $d_n + d_j = g$. If $d_j + d_n - 1 \geq g$, then since $d'_n = d_n \neq d_n - 1$, it must be that $d_n = d_{n-1}$. This condition restricts the second largest digit to be either d_n or $g - 1$, and the second smallest to be $g - d_n$ if $d_n \neq d_{n-2}$ or $g - d_n - 1$ if $d_n = d_{n-2}$. Since $d'_{n-1} = d_{n-1} = d_n \neq g$, we must have $d_n = d_{n-2}$. Continuing in this fashion, one finds that $d_n = d_j$, which contradicts the hypothesis. Thus $d_n + d_j = g$.

(ii) Suppose first that $d_n > g - d_1 - 1$, then d_n is the largest digit in (1.4a). Then

$$d'_n = \begin{cases} d_n - d_1 + 1 & \text{if } d_1 + d_n - 1 < g \\ 2d_n - g & \text{if } d_1 + d_n - 1 \geq g, d_n \neq d_{n-1} \\ 2d_n - g + 1 & \text{if } d_1 + d_n - 1 \geq g, d_n = d_{n-1}. \end{cases}$$

If $d_1 + d_n - 1 < g$ and $g < d_1 + d_n + 1$, then $g = d_1 + d_n$. Since $d'_n = d_n$, one must have $d_1 = 1$ and $d_n = g - 1$. If $d_1 + d_n - 1 \geq g$, then $d_n = d_{n-1}$ as shown in (i). Hence $d_n = d_{n-1} = \dots = d_1 = g - 1$. This cannot occur in a one-cycle unless $g = 2$, in which case $d_n = g - 1 = 1 = d_1$. Thus, if $d_n > g - d_1 - 1$, $d_n = g - 1$ and $d_1 = 1$.

Now suppose that $d_n \leq g - d_1 - 1$. Then the largest digit in (1.4a) is $g - d_1 - 1$ and the smallest is $d_1 - 1$. Hence

$$d_n = d'_n = (g - d_1 - 1) - (d_1 - 1) = g - 2d_1$$

and

$$d_n + 2d_1 = g.$$

Theorem 2.2: If $D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ represents a one-cycle with $d_n = \dots = d_j \neq 0$, $j \geq 1$, and $d_k = 0$ for $k < j$, then $d_n = \dots = d_j = g/2$. Further,

(i) if $g \neq 2$, then $r \equiv 0 \pmod{3}$ and $g \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$. In particular

$$D = \begin{cases} \begin{matrix} \overbrace{\left(\frac{g}{2}, \frac{g}{2}, \dots, \frac{g}{2}\right)}^{r/3 \text{ terms}} & \overbrace{(0, 0, \dots, 0)}^{r/6 \text{ terms}} \end{matrix} & \text{when } r \equiv 0 \pmod{2} \\ \begin{matrix} \overbrace{\left(\frac{g}{2}, \frac{g}{2}, \dots, \frac{g}{2}\right)}^{r/3 \text{ terms}} & \overbrace{(0, 0, \dots, 0)}^{(r-3)/6 \text{ terms}} \end{matrix} & \text{when } r \equiv 1 \pmod{2} \end{cases}$$

(ii) if $g = 2$, then every n -tuple D is a one-cycle.

Proof: (i) If $g > 2$, then $j > 1$ from (1.4). From (1.4b) and (1.4d), any n -tuple $(k, k, \dots, k, 0, 0, \dots, 0)$ will give rise to a successor with digits

$$\overbrace{k \ k \ \dots \ k}^{(n-j) \text{ terms}} \ k - 1 \ \overbrace{g - 1 \ \dots \ g - 1}^{2(j-1) + \delta \text{ terms}} \ \overbrace{g - k - 1 \ \dots \ g - k - 1}^{(n-j) \text{ terms}} \ g - k.$$

Clearly the largest digit is $g - 1$. The smallest is either $k - 1$, forcing $k = g/2$, or $g - k - 1$, forcing $k - (g - k) = k$, which is impossible. Hence

$$d_n = d_{n-1} = \dots = d_j = \frac{g}{2}.$$

Consider

$$D = \left(\overbrace{\left(\frac{g}{2}, \frac{g}{2}, \dots, \frac{g}{2}\right)}^{a \text{ terms}} \overbrace{(0, 0, \dots, 0)}^{(n-a) \text{ terms}} \right), \quad a = n - j + 1.$$

The digits of the successor of D are

$$\overbrace{\frac{g}{2} \ \frac{g}{2} \ \dots \ \frac{g}{2}}^{(a-1) \text{ terms}} \ \frac{g}{2} - 1 \ \overbrace{g - 1 \ \dots \ g - 1}^{2(n-a) + \delta \text{ terms}} \ \overbrace{\frac{g}{2} - 1 \ \dots \ \frac{g}{2} - 1}^{(a-1) \text{ terms}} \ \frac{g}{2}. \quad (2.1)$$

Ordering the digits of (2.1) in descending order, one obtains

$$\overbrace{g - 1 \ \dots \ g - 1}^{2(n-a) + \delta \text{ terms}} \ \overbrace{\frac{g}{2} \ \dots \ \frac{g}{2}}^{a \text{ terms}} \ \overbrace{\frac{g}{2} - 1 \ \dots \ \frac{g}{2} - 1}^{a \text{ terms}}. \quad (2.2)$$

Differences equal to $g/2$ will be generated by the pairs $(g-1, g/2-1)$, and differences will be generated by the pairs $(g/2, g/2)$. Hence, if D is a one-cycle, then $2(n-a) + \delta = a$, that is, $r = 2n + \delta = 3a$. In addition,

$$n - a = \begin{cases} \frac{r}{6} & \text{if } r \equiv 0 \pmod{2} \\ \frac{r-3}{6} & \text{if } r \equiv 1 \pmod{2}. \end{cases}$$

(ii) If $g = 2$, then the digits of the successor of D ordered in descending order, from (2.2), are

$$\underbrace{2(n-a)+\delta \text{ terms}}_{1 \ 1 \ \dots \ 1} \quad \underbrace{a \text{ terms}}_{1 \ \dots \ 1} \quad \underbrace{a \text{ terms}}_{0 \ \dots \ 0}. \quad (2.3)$$

Clearly the first a succeeding differences in (2.3) are equal to 1 and the remaining $(n-a)$ differences are equal to 0. Therefore, a is a one-cycle for all $1 \leq a \leq n$.

Definition 2.1: For $i = 0, 1, \dots, g-1$, let ℓ_i be the number of entries in $(d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ that equal i , and let c_i be the number of digits of $T(a)$ that equal i .

For example, if $g = 10$, $\delta = 0$, and $D = (9, 9, 7, 7, 3, 1, 0, 0)$, then

$$\ell_9 = 2, \ell_8 = 0, \ell_7 = 2, \ell_6 = \ell_5 = \ell_4 = 0, \ell_3 = 1, \ell_2 = 0, \ell_1 = 1, \text{ and } \ell_0 = 2$$

From (1.4), the digits of D' are

$$9 \ 9 \ 7 \ 7 \ 3 \ 0 \ 9 \ 9 \ 9 \ 9 \ 8 \ 6 \ 2 \ 2 \ 0 \ 1$$

giving rise to the digit counters

$$c_9 = 6, c_8 = 1, c_7 = 2, c_6 = 1, c_5 = c_4 = 0, c_3 = 1, c_2 = 2, c_1 = 1, \text{ and } c_0 = 2$$

Using the results of Section 1, we now obtain the following corollary.

Corollary 2.1: If $d_n + d_j = g$, where d_j is the smallest nonzero entry in

$$D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1),$$

then

$$\begin{aligned} c_{g-1} &= \ell_{g-1} + 2\ell_0 + \delta \\ c_i &= \ell_i + \ell_{g-i-1} \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, g-2 \\ c_0 &= \ell_{g-1} \end{aligned}$$

Proof: This result follows directly from (1.4).

3. THE DETERMINATION OF ALL DECADIC ONE-CYCLES

If one fixes $g = 10$, then each one-cycle $D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_2, d_1)$ falls into one of four classes. These classes can be described using the difference counters ℓ_i , $i = 0, 1, 2, \dots, g-1$ introduced in Definition 2.1. The following conditions on the difference counters must hold for $D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ to be in a given class.

Class A: $\ell_8 = \ell_6 = \ell_4 = \ell_2 = 2\ell_0 + \delta$
 $\ell_7 = \ell_5 = \ell_1$
 $\ell_9 = 0$ iff $\ell_1 = 0$
 ℓ_0, ℓ_1 , or δ is nonzero

Class B: $\ell_9 = \ell_1 = 0$ $\ell_4 = \ell_2 = \ell_0 + \frac{\ell_8}{2}$
 $\ell_7 = 2\ell_0 - \ell_8$ $\delta = 0$
 $\ell_6 = \ell_8 \neq 0$ $\ell_8 \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$

and
$$\ell_5 = \ell_3 = \ell_0 - \frac{\ell_8}{2} \quad \ell_0 \geq \frac{\ell_8}{2}$$

Class C:
$$\begin{aligned} \ell_6 &= \ell_2 = 1 \\ \ell_i &= 0, i \neq 2, 3, 6 \\ \delta &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

Class D:
$$\begin{aligned} \ell_5 &= 2\ell_0 + \delta \\ \ell_i &= 0, i \neq 0, 5 \\ \ell_0 \text{ or } \delta &\text{ is nonzero} \end{aligned}$$

Theorem 3.1: Let $(d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ be a decadic one-cycle with $d_n + d_j = 10$ and $\ell_0 = j - 1$. Suppose that $d_j \neq 5$ and either $j \neq 1$ or $\delta \neq 0$. Then $(d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ is in either Class A or Class B.

Proof: We wish to determine the difference counters ℓ_i , $i = 0, 1, 2, \dots, g - 1$. To do this, we shall explore the various ways these differences can be computed from the digits in a self-producing integer. From Corollary 2.1,

$$\begin{aligned} c_9 &= \ell_9 + 2\ell_0 + \delta \\ c_i &= \ell_i + \ell_{9-i} \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, 8 \\ c_0 &= \ell_9 \end{aligned}$$

Certainly, $\ell_9 = \min(c_9, c_0) = c_0$, since a difference of 9 can only be obtained from the digits 9 and 0. Hence

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_8 &= \min(2\ell_0 + \delta, c_1) = \min(2\ell_0 + \delta, \ell_1 + \ell_8) \\ &= \begin{cases} 2\ell_0 + \delta & \ell_1 \neq 0 \\ \ell_8 & \ell_1 = 0 \end{cases} \end{aligned} \quad (3.1)$$

Thus the value of ℓ_8 depends on whether ℓ_1 is zero or nonzero. If $\ell_1 \neq 0$, then there are fewer 9's than 1's remaining and hence there will be as many differences of 8 as there are 9's remaining. If $\ell_1 = 0$, then there are fewer 1's in the self-producing integer than remaining 9's, and there will be as many differences of 8 as there are 1's. This technique of evaluating the difference counters is used throughout this section.

Suppose first that $\ell_1 \neq 0$. Note that if $\ell_1 \neq 0$, $d_j = 1$, and hence $d_n = 9$. Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_9 &= \ell_9 \neq 0 \\ \ell_8 &= 2\ell_0 + \delta \\ \ell_7 &= \ell_1 \end{aligned} \quad (3.2)$$

and
$$\ell_6 = \min(2\ell_0 + \delta, \ell_2 + \ell_7).$$

Now if $\ell_2 + \ell_7 < 2\ell_0 + \delta$, then one finds either

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_6 &= \ell_2 + \ell_7 \\ \ell_5 &= \ell_8 - (\ell_2 + \ell_7) \\ \ell_4 &= \ell_7 + \ell_2 \\ \ell_3 &= \ell_3 + \ell_6 - \ell_8 \end{aligned} \quad (3.3)$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_6 &= \ell_2 + \ell_7 \\ \ell_5 &= \ell_3 + \ell_6 \\ \ell_4 &= \ell_8 - (\ell_2 + \ell_7 + \ell_3 + \ell_6) \\ \ell_3 &= \ell_7 + \ell_2 \\ \ell_2 &= \ell_3 \end{aligned} \quad (3.4)$$

and
$$\ell_1 = \min(\ell_2 + \ell_7, \ell_8 - \ell_2 - \ell_7)$$

Equations (3.3) imply that $l_6 = l_8$ or $l_2 + l_7 = 2l_0 + \delta$, which is a contradiction. Equations (3.4) imply that $l_1 = 0$, again a contradiction. Thus we must have $2l_0 + \delta \leq l_2 + l_7$. Continuing in like fashion,

$$\begin{aligned} l_6 &= 2l_0 + \delta \\ l_5 &= l_2 + l_7 - (2l_0 + \delta) \\ l_4 &= 2l_0 + \delta \\ l_3 &= l_3 \\ l_2 &= 2l_0 + \delta \\ l_1 &= l_5 \\ l_0 &= \frac{l_4 - \delta}{2} \end{aligned} \quad (3.5)$$

Equations (3.5) together with equations (3.2) determine the relations given in Class A with l_1 and l_9 nonzero.

Suppose now that $l_1 = 0$. From (3.1),

$$\begin{aligned} l_8 &= l_8 \\ l_7 &= \min(2l_0 + \delta - l_8, l_2 + l_7), \text{ or} \\ l_7 &= \begin{cases} 2l_0 + \delta - l_8 & l_2 \neq 0 \\ l_7 & l_2 = 0 \end{cases} \end{aligned} \quad (3.6)$$

We first consider the case where $l_2 \neq 0$. From (3.1) and (3.6) it is clear that

$$\begin{aligned} l_9 &= 0 \\ l_8 &= l_8 \\ l_7 &= 2l_0 + \delta - l_8 \\ l_6 &= \min(l_8, l_2) \end{aligned} \quad (3.7)$$

If $l_2 < l_8$, then

$$\begin{aligned} l_6 &= l_2 \\ l_5 &= l_8 - l_2 \\ l_4 &= l_2 + l_7 \\ l_3 &= l_3 + l_6 - l_8 - l_7 \\ l_2 &= l_3 = 2l_0 + \delta \end{aligned} \quad (3.8)$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} l_6 &= l_2 \\ l_5 &= l_8 - l_2 \\ l_4 &= l_2 + l_3 + l_6 - l_8 \\ l_3 &= 2l_0 + \delta - l_3 - l_6 \\ l_2 &= l_6 + l_3 = l_2 + l_3 \end{aligned} \quad (3.9)$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} l_6 &= l_2 \\ l_5 &= l_3 + l_6 \\ l_4 &= l_8 - l_2 - l_3 - l_6 \\ l_3 &= l_7 + l_2 \\ l_2 &= l_3 + l_6 \end{aligned} \quad (3.10)$$

In (3.8), $l_5 = -l_7 = 0$, so $l_2 = l_8$. In (3.9), $l_3 = 0$, which implies $l_2 = l_8$. In (3.10), $l_2 = 0$, so all three circumstances lead to a contradiction. Hence, it must be that $l_8 \leq l_2$, and, therefore, in (3.7) one finds $l_6 = l_8$. In this case, there are two possible values for l_4 , viz., $l_4 = l_6 + \min(l_7, l_3)$.

If $l_4 = l_6 + l_7$, then

$$\begin{aligned} l_6 &= l_8 \\ l_5 &= l_2 - l_8 \\ l_4 &= l_6 + l_7 \\ l_3 &= l_3 - l_7 \end{aligned} \quad \begin{aligned} l_2 &= l_6 = l_6 + l_5 \\ l_1 &= l_5 \\ l_0 &= \frac{l_6 - \delta}{2} \end{aligned} \quad (3.11)$$

This implies that $\ell_5 = \ell_7 = 0$, $\ell_8 = \ell_6 = \ell_4 = \ell_2 = 2\ell_0 + \delta$, so (3.11) falls into Class A with $\ell_1 = 0$. Otherwise,

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_6 &= \ell_8 & \ell_2 &= \ell_3 + \ell_6 \\ \ell_5 &= \ell_2 - \ell_8 & \ell_1 &= 0 \\ \ell_4 &= \ell_6 + \ell_3 & \ell_0 &= \frac{\ell_4 + \ell_5 - \delta}{2} \\ \ell_3 &= \ell_7 - \ell_3 \end{aligned} \quad (3.12)$$

Equations (3.12) fall into Class B.

It can easily be checked that there exist no one-cycles with $d_n = 7$ and $d_j = 3$ or $d_n = 6$ and $d_j = 4$. This completes the proof of the theorem.

Theorem 3.2: Let $D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ be a decadic one-cycle with $d_n = 9$, $d_1 = 1$ and $\delta = 0$. Then

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_7 &= \ell_5 = \ell_1 \neq 0 \\ \ell_8 &= \ell_6 = \ell_4 = \ell_2 = \ell_0 = 0, \end{aligned}$$

and this one-cycle falls into Class A.

Proof: This results immediately from Corollary 2.1, since $\ell_0 = \delta = 0$.

Theorem 3.3: Let $D = (d_n, d_{n-1}, \dots, d_1)$ be a decadic one-cycle with $d_n + 2d_1 = 10$ and $\delta = 0$. Then

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_6 &= \ell_2 = 1 \\ \ell_i &= 0, i \neq 2, 3, 6; \end{aligned}$$

hence, this one-cycle will fall into Class C.

Proof: If $d_1 = 1$, one obtains the following system of inconsistent equations:

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_8 &= 1 \\ \ell_7 &= \ell_1 - 1 \\ \ell_6 &= 1 \\ \ell_5 &= \ell_7 + \ell_2 \\ \ell_4 &= 0 \\ \ell_3 &= \ell_3 + \ell_6 = \ell_3 + 1 \end{aligned}$$

If $d_1 = 2$, then

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_6 &= 1 \\ \ell_5 &= \ell_2 - 1 \\ \ell_4 &= 0 \\ \ell_3 &= \ell_3 \\ \ell_2 &= 1 \end{aligned}$$

which falls into Class C. It can easily be checked that $d_1 = 3$ implies that $\ell_3 = \ell_3 - 1$, so the proof is complete.

Since Class D consists of all the remaining one-cycles, namely, those with $d_j = 5$ from Theorem 3.1, this completes the classification of all decadic one-cycles.

4. THE DETERMINATION OF KAPREKAR CONSTANTS

An r -digit Kaprekar constant is an r -digit, self-producing integer such that repeated iterations of T applied to any starting value a will always lead to this integer. Utilizing the results of Section 3, one can now show that only for $r = 3$ and $r = 4$ does such an integer exist.

Lemma 4.1: For $r = 2n$ with $n \geq 3$, there exist at least two distinct one-cycles.

Proof: If $r = 6$, then one finds the one cycles

$$D_1 = (6, 3, 2) \quad \text{and} \quad D_2 = (5, 5, 0).$$

If $r = 2n$, $n \geq 4$, then two distinct one-cycles are

$$D_1: \ell_6 = \ell_2 = 1; \ell_3 = n - 2; \ell_i = 0, i \neq 2, 3, 6$$

$$D_2: \ell_7 = \ell_5 = \ell_1 = 1; \ell_9 = n - 3; \ell_i = 0, i \neq 1, 5, 7, 9.$$

Lemma 4.2: For $r = 2n + 1$ with $n \geq 7$, there exist at least two distinct one-cycles.

Proof: If $n = 7$, then one finds the one-cycles:

$$D_1 = (8, 6, 4, 3, 3, 3, 2) \text{ and } D_2 = (5, 5, 5, 5, 5, 0, 0).$$

If $r = 2n + 1$, $n \geq 8$, then two distinct one-cycles are:

$$D_1: \ell_8 = \ell_7 = \ell_6 = \ell_5 = \ell_4 = \ell_2 = \ell_1 = 1; \ell_9 = n - 7; \ell_3 = \ell_0 = 0$$

$$D_2: \ell_8 = \ell_6 = \ell_4 = \ell_2 = 1; \ell_3 = n - 4; \ell_9 = \ell_7 = \ell_5 = \ell_1 = \ell_0 = 0.$$

Lemma 4.3: If $r = 2, 5, 7, 9, 11$, or 13 , then there does not exist a Kaprekar constant.

Proof: When $r = 2, 5$, and 7 there are no one-cycles. When $r = 9$ there are two distinct one-cycles:

$$D_1 = (5, 5, 5, 0) \text{ and } D_2 = (8, 6, 4, 2).$$

If $r = 11$ the only one-cycle is $D_1 = (8, 6, 4, 3, 2)$, but there is also a cycle of length four, viz.,

$$(8, 8, 4, 3, 2) \rightarrow (8, 6, 5, 4, 2) \rightarrow (8, 6, 4, 2, 1) \rightarrow (9, 6, 6, 4, 2).$$

If $r = 13$ the only one-cycle is $D_1 = (8, 6, 4, 3, 3, 2)$, but there is also a cycle of length two, viz.,

$$(8, 7, 3, 3, 2, 1) \rightarrow (9, 6, 6, 5, 4, 3).$$

Theorem 4.1: The only decadic Kaprekar constants are 495 and 6174.

Proof: This follows from Lemmas 4.1-4.3.

REFERENCES

1. D. R. Kaprekar. "Another Solitaire Game." *Scripta Mathematica* 15 (1949): 244-245.
2. D. R. Kaprekar. "An Interesting Property of the Number 6174." *Scripta Mathematica* 21 (1955):304.
3. D. R. Kaprekar. *The New Constant 6174*. Devali, India: By the author, 1959. Available from D. R. Kaprekar, 25 N. Paise, Devali Camp, Devali, India.
4. M. Gardner. "Mathematical Games." *Scientific American* 232 (1975):112.
5. H. Hasse & G. D. Prichett. "The Determination of All Four-Digit Kaprekar Constants." *J. Reine Angew. Math.* 299/300 (1978):113-124.
6. J. H. Jordan. "Self-Producing Sequences of Digits." *American Mathematical Monthly* 71 (1964):61-64.
7. G. D. Prichett. "Terminating Cycles for Iterated Difference Values of Five-Digit Integers." *J. Reine Angew. Math.* 303/304 (1978):379-388.
8. Lucio Saffara. *Teoria generalizzata della trasformazione che ha come invariante il numero 6174*. Bologna: Via Guidotti 50, Bologna I-40134, 1965.
9. C. W. Trigg. "Kaprekar's Routine With Two-Digit Integers." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 9 (1971):189-193.

THE DECIMAL EXPANSION OF $1/89$ AND RELATED RESULTS

CALVIN T. LONG

Washington State University, Pullman, WA 99164

One of the more bizarre and unexpected results concerning the Fibonacci sequence is the fact that

$$\frac{1}{89} = .0112358 \begin{matrix} 13 \\ 21 \\ 34 \\ 55 \\ 89 \\ 144 \\ 233 \\ \dots \end{matrix} \quad (1)$$

$$= \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{10^i},$$

where F_i denotes the i th Fibonacci number. The result follows immediately from Binet's formula, as do the equations

$$\frac{19}{89} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{L_{i-1}}{10^i} \quad (2)$$

$$\frac{1}{109} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{(-10)^i} \quad (3)$$

and

$$-\frac{21}{109} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{L_{i-1}}{(-10)^i}. \quad (4)$$

where L_i denotes the i th Lucas numbers. It is interesting that all these results can be obtained from the following unusual identity, which is easily proved by mathematical induction.

Theorem 1: Let a, b, c, d , and B be integers. Let $\{\mu_n\}$ be the sequence defined by the recurrence $\mu_0 = c, \mu_1 = d, \mu_{n+2} = a\mu_{n+1} + b\mu_n$ for all $n \geq 2$. Let m and N be integers defined by the equations

$$B^2 = m + Ba + b \quad \text{and} \quad N = cm + dB + bc.$$

Then

$$B^n N = m \sum_{i=1}^{n+1} B^{n+1-i} \mu_{i-1} + B\mu_{n+1} + b\mu_n \quad (5)$$

for all $n \geq 0$. Also, $N \equiv 0 \pmod{B}$.

Proof: The result is clearly true for $n = 0$, since it then reduces to the equation

$$N = cm + dB + bc$$

of the hypotheses. Assume that

$$B^k N = m \sum_{i=1}^{k+1} B^{k+1-i} \mu_{i-1} + B\mu_{k+1} + b\mu_k.$$

Then

$$B^{k+1} N = m \sum_{i=1}^{k+1} B^{k+2-i} \mu_{i-1} + B^2 \mu_{k+1} + Bb\mu_k$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&= m \sum_{i=1}^{k+1} B^{k+2-i} \mu_{i-1} + (m + Ba + b) \mu_{k+1} + Bb \mu_k \\
&= m \sum_{i=1}^{k+2} B^{k+2-i} \mu_{i-1} + B(a \mu_{k+1} + b \mu_k) + b \mu_{k+1} \\
&= m \sum_{i=1}^{k+2} B^{k+2-i} \mu_{i-1} + B \mu_{k+2} + b \mu_{k+1}.
\end{aligned}$$

This completes the induction. Finally, to see that $N \equiv 0 \pmod{B}$, we have only to note that

$$N = cm + dB + bc = c(B^2 - Ba - b) + dB + bc = cB^2 - caB + dB \equiv 0 \pmod{B}.$$

Now, it is well known that the terms of the sequence defined in Theorem 1 are given by

$$\mu_n = \left(\frac{c}{2} + \frac{2d - c}{\sqrt{a^2 + 4b}} \right) \left(\frac{a + \sqrt{a^2 + 4b}}{2} \right)^n + \left(\frac{c}{2} - \frac{2d - c}{\sqrt{a^2 + 4b}} \right) \left(\frac{a - \sqrt{a^2 + 4b}}{2} \right)^n. \quad (6)$$

Thus it follows from (5) that

$$\frac{N}{Bm} = \sum_{i=1}^{n+1} \frac{\mu_{i-1}}{B^i} + \frac{B\mu_{n+1} + b\mu_n}{mB^{n+1}} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{\mu_{i-1}}{B^i}, \quad (7)$$

provided that the remainder term tends to 0 as n tends to infinity, and a sufficient condition for this is that

$$\left| \frac{a + \sqrt{a^2 + 4b}}{2B} \right| < 1 \quad \text{and} \quad \left| \frac{a - \sqrt{a^2 + 4b}}{2B} \right| < 1.$$

Thus we have proved the following theorem.

Theorem 2: If a, b, c, d, m, N , and B are integers, with m and N as defined above and if

$$\left| \frac{a + \sqrt{a^2 + 4b}}{2B} \right| < 1 \quad \text{and} \quad \left| \frac{a - \sqrt{a^2 + 4b}}{2B} \right| < 1,$$

then

$$\frac{N}{Bm} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{\mu_{i-1}}{B^i}. \quad (8)$$

Of course, equations (1)-(4) all follow from (8) by particular choices of a, b, c , and d . To obtain (2), for example, we set $c = 2$, $a = b = d = 1$, and $B = 10$. It then follows that

$$m = B^2 - Ba - b = 100 - 10 - 1 = 89$$

$$N = cm + dB + bc = 178 + 10 + 2 = 190$$

and

$$\frac{19}{89} = \frac{190}{10 \cdot 89} = \frac{N}{Bm} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{L_{i-1}}{10^i} \quad \text{as claimed.}$$

To obtain (3), we set $c = 0$, $a = b = d = 1$, and $B = -10$. Then

$$m = B^2 - Ba - b = 100 + 10 - 1 = 109,$$

$$N = cm + dB + bc = -10,$$

and

$$\frac{N}{Bm} = \frac{-10}{-10 \cdot 109} = \frac{1}{109} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{(-10)^i} \quad \text{as indicated.}$$

Finally, we note that interesting results can be obtained by setting B equal to a power of 10. For example, if $B = 10^h$ for some integer h , $c = 0$, and $a = b = d = 1$,

$$m = 10^{2h} - 10^h - 1, N = 10^h,$$

and (8) reduces to

$$\frac{1}{10^{2h} - 10^h - 1} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{10^{hi}}. \quad (9)$$

For successive values of h this gives

$$\frac{1}{89} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{10^i} \quad (10)$$

as we already know,

$$\frac{1}{9899} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{10^{2i}} \quad (11)$$

$$= .000101020305081321\dots,$$

$$\frac{1}{998999} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{10^{3i}} \quad (12)$$

$$= .000001001002003005008013\dots,$$

and so on. In case $B = (-10)^h$ for successive values of h , $c = 0$, and $a = b = d = 1$, we obtain

$$\frac{1}{109} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{(-10)^i}, \quad (13)$$

$$\frac{1}{10099} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{(-100)^i}, \quad (14)$$

$$\frac{1}{1000999} = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{F_{i-1}}{(-1000)^i}, \quad (15)$$

and so on. Other fractions corresponding to (2) and (3) above are

$$\frac{19}{89}, \frac{199}{9899}, \frac{1999}{998999}, \dots$$

and

$$-\frac{21}{109}, -\frac{201}{10099}, -\frac{2001}{1000999}, \dots$$

A ROOT PROPERTY OF A PSI-TYPE EQUATION

FURIO ALBERTI

University of Illinois, Chicago, IL 60680

1. INTRODUCTION

By counting the number of roots between the asymptotes of the graph of

$$(1) \quad y = f(x) = 1/x + 1/(x+1) + \dots + 1/(x+k-1) - 1/(x+k) - \dots - 1/(x+2k)$$

we find that $f(x)$ possesses zeros which are all negative except for one, say r , and this positive r has the interesting property that

$$[r] = k^2,$$

where the brackets denote the greatest integer function.

2. THE POSITIVE ROOT

The existence of r is obtained by direct calculation.

Theorem 1: $f(x) = 0$ possesses a positive root r , and $[r] = k^2$.

Proof:

$$(2) \quad f(x) = \sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \frac{1}{x+j} - \sum_{j=0}^k \frac{1}{x+k+j} = \sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \frac{1}{(x+j)(x+k+j)} - \frac{1}{x+2k}.$$

Similarly, we remove the first term from the second summation and combine the series parts to get

$$(3) \quad f(x) = \sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \frac{k+1}{(x+j)(x+k+1+j)} - \frac{1}{x+k}.$$

Now, if we multiply equation (2) by $x+2k$, and equation (3) by $-(x+k)$ and add the two resulting equations, we get, after replacing x by $k^2 + h$, the result

$$(4) \quad kf(k^2 + h) = \sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \frac{1}{k^2 + h + j} \cdot \frac{(1-h)k^2 - (h+j)k - h(h+j)}{(k^2 + k + h + j)(k^2 + k + h + 1 + j)}.$$

We now see at once that $f(k^2) > 0$ and $f(k^2 + 1) < 0$, since k is positive, and Theorem 1 is proved.

3. THE NUMBER OF ROOTS

The function $f(x)$ given in (1) is defined for $k = 1, 2, 3, \dots$.

Theorem 2: $f(x) = 0$ possesses exactly $2k - 1$ negative roots and exactly one positive root.

Proof: As $x \rightarrow 0^-$, $f(x) \rightarrow -\infty$, and as $x \rightarrow -1^+$, $f(x) \rightarrow +\infty$; therefore, $f(x) = 0$ for some x in $-1 < x < 0$. Similarly for the other asymptotes, and we get

$$(5) \quad -j + 1 < x < -j + 2, \quad j = 2, 3, 4, \dots, k,$$

implies the existence of a root in each such interval.

The branch of the curve between $-k$ and $-k + 1$ is skipped for the moment. Continuing, we find as above that (5) implies roots for

$$j = k + 2, k + 3, \dots, 2k + 1.$$

Thus, $f(x)$ possesses at least $2k - 1$ negative roots.

Now we combine the fractions in the expression for $f(x)$ to get

$$(6) \quad f(x) = P(x)/[x(x+1) \dots (x+2k)]$$

and observe that these negative roots are also zeros of $P(x)$, since the factors in the denominator of (6) cannot be zero at these values of x . But the degree of $P(x)$ is $2k$. Therefore, $P(x)$ possesses one more zero, and this is then the r obtained in Section 2. Q.E.D.

Remark: The branch of the curve, skipped in the above argument, then does not cut the x -axis at all.

4. THE PSI FUNCTION

The psi function, denoted by $\Psi(x)$, is defined by some authors [2, p. 241] by means of

$$(7) \quad \Delta^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) = \Psi(x) + C,$$

where C is an arbitrary periodic function. This is the analog for defining $\ln(x)$ in the elementary calculus by means of

$$\int \frac{1}{x} dx = \ln(x) + c.$$

We employ (7) to obtain

$$f(x) = 2\Psi(x+k) - \Psi(x) - \Psi(x+2k+1).$$

This provides us with an iteration method for the calculation of r , starting with $r_1 = k^2$.

REFERENCES

1. T. J. Bromwich. *An Introduction to the Theory of Infinite Series*. London: Macmillan, 1947. Pp. 522 ff.
2. L. M. Milne-Thomson. *The Calculus of Finite Differences*. London: Macmillan, 1951.
3. I. J. Schwatt. *An Introduction to the Operations with Series*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1924. Pp. 165 ff.
4. E. T. Whittaker & G. N. Watson. *A Course of Modern Analysis*. New York: Macmillan, 1947. Pp. 246 ff.

RECOGNITION ALGORITHMS FOR FIBONACCI NUMBERS

DENNIS C. SMOLARSKI

University of Illinois, Urbana, IL 61801

LEONARD F. KLOSINSKI

University of Santa Clara, Santa Clara, CA 95053

A FORTRAN, BASIC, or ALGOL program to generate Fibonacci numbers is not unfamiliar to many mathematicians. A Turing machine or a Markov algorithm to recognize Fibonacci numbers is, however, considerably more abstruse.

A Turing machine, an abstract mathematical system which can simulate many of the operations of computers, is named after A.M. Turing who first described such a machine in [2]. It consists of three main parts: (1) a finite set of states or modes; (2) a tape of infinite length with tape reader; (3) a set of instructions or rules. The tape reader can read only one character at a time,

and, given the machine state and tape symbol, each instruction gives us information consisting of three parts; (1) the character to be written on the tape, (2) the direction in which the tape reader is to move; (3) the new state the machine is to be in.

A Turing machine can be described by either a diagram or a table. An example of a Turing machine that adds two numbers is shown in Fig. 1. The figure shows both the table form and the diagram form of this Turing machine.

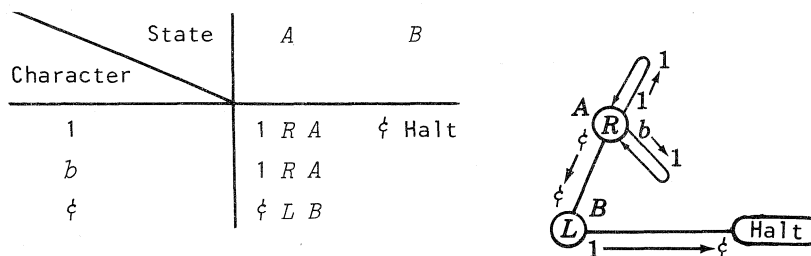


Fig. 1

Let us now consider the tape shown in (1). This tape shows a

(1) 1 1 b 1 1 1 ϕ

two represented by two ones, a blank space represented by b , a three shown by three ones, and the ϕ which will mean the end of the information. The Turing machine shown in Fig. 1, when started in State A at the leftmost character of the tape in (1) will produce the following tape which shows a five, the sum of two and three.

(2) 1 1 1 1 1 ϕ ϕ

The above table is read in the following way. The first row represents the states that the machine can be in, and the first column shows the characters that the machine can read. Let us, for example, look at the entry under State A and Character b . That entry, 1 R A, like every entry, save one, consists of three parts. The first part of the entry, 1, means change the character that is being read, b in this case, to a 1; the R, the second part of the entry, means move one space to the right on the tape; and the A, the third part of the entry, says that the machine is to be in State A before reading the next character. Thus, if the machine is in State A and sees ϕ , the table says that it changes the ϕ to 1, moves left one place, and goes into State B.

The above diagram, which is equivalent to the table, can be most easily explained by considering only a portion of it. The states of the

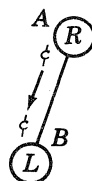


Fig. 2

machine are shown on the outside of the circles; the direction of the move is shown inside the next circle; and the character change is shown along the line

connecting the circles. Thus, Fig. 2 says that a machine in State A and seeing ϕ , changes ϕ to ϕ , moves left one place, and goes into State B .

The Turing machine diagram which appears in Fig. 3 exhibits a machine which will halt only when presented with a string of consecutive ones, whose length is a Fibonacci number. If the total number of consecutive ones is not a Fibonacci number, the machine will loop endlessly. A basic assumption is that the string of ones is bounded on each side by at least one zero.

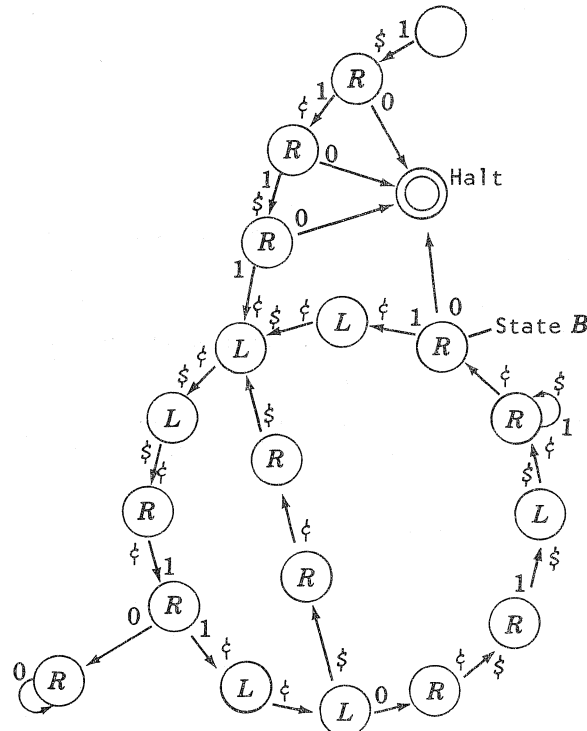


Fig. 3

The machine depicted examines the string of ones, starting at the left end, and repeatedly builds larger and larger Fibonacci numbers within this string. It keeps track of its place, and of previously constructed Fibonacci numbers, by slowly changing the ones to a series of dollar signs and cent signs as it moves through the string of ones. Each time the machine reaches the states labeled B in Fig. 3, the segment of the tape which has been examined has been changed to a string of dollar signs with the exception of a cent sign in the F_n place (which is the place immediately to the left of the tape digit being read while in State B), and a second cent sign in the F_{n-1} place.

After the machine finishes constructing a Fibonacci number within the string of ones, that is, each time it reaches State B , it checks to see if the next digit on the tape is zero or not. If so, the number of ones in the original string is a Fibonacci number and the machine halts. If, however, the next digit is a one, the machine attempts to build the next larger Fibonacci number within the string of ones (and, at this point, dollar and cent signs). If it encounters a zero on the tape before completing the construction of this next Fibonacci number, the machine goes into an endless loop. Thus, it halts only when the original number of consecutive ones is a Fibonacci number.

of 1's. At the end of a loop, the α 's are changed to deltas and more 1's are changed into α 's to correspond to the number of β 's which begin the string. The deltas are then changed to β 's. Thus, after one loop, the number of α 's has changed from F_i to F_{i+1} , and the number of β 's has changed from F_{i+1} to

$$F_i + F_{i+1} = F_{i+2}.$$

If there are no more 1's to be changed at the end of a loop, the Markov algorithm stops at rule 12, indicating that the original string of 1's was a Fibonacci number. If, however, the string was not a Fibonacci number, the Markov algorithm jumps out of the loop in midstream of changing 1's to α 's and goes into an endless loop at rule 14 after changing the α 's back to 1's.

REFERENCES

1. J. E. Hopcroft & J. D. Ullman. *Formal Languages and Their Relation to Automata*. Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1969.
2. A. M. Turing. "On Computable Numbers with an Application to the Entscheidungsproblem." *Proc. London Math. Soc.* 2-42:230-265.

ON SOME CONJECTURES OF GOULD ON THE PARITIES OF THE BINOMIAL COEFFICIENTS

ROBERT S. GARFINKEL

Management Science Program, University of Tennessee, Knoxville, TE 37916

STANLEY M. SELKOW

Computer Science Dept., University of Tennessee, Knoxville, TE 37916

In studying the parities of the binomial coefficients, Gould [1] noted several interesting relationships about the signs of the sequence of numbers

$$(-1)^{\binom{n}{0}}, (-1)^{\binom{n}{1}}, \dots, (-1)^{\binom{n}{n}}.$$

Further interesting relationships may be discovered by converting each such sequence to a binary number, $f(2, n)$, by

$$f(x, n) = \sum_{k=0}^n x^k \frac{1 - (-1)^{\binom{n}{k}}}{2} \quad (1)$$

and then comparing the numbers of the sequence $f(2, 0), f(2, 1), f(2, 2), \dots$. The following conjectures were then proposed by Gould.

Conjecture 1: $f(2, 2^m - 1) = 2^{2^m} - 1$.

Conjecture 2: $f(2, 2) = 2^{2^m} + 1$.

Conjecture 3: $f(x, 2n + 1) = (x + 1)f(x, 2n)$.

We will prove these conjectures and present some related results.

The following lemma provides a convenient recursive scheme for generating the sequence of numbers $f(x, 0), f(x, 1), \dots$. We use the notation $(\cdot)_x$ to denote the representation of a number to the base x .

Lemma 1: The sequence $f(x, n)$ may be defined by $f(x, 0) = 1$, and if

$$f(x, n - 1) = (a_{n-1}, \dots, a_0)_x$$

for $n > 0$, then

$$f(x, n) = x^n + 1 + \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} x^k |a_k - a_{k-1}|. \quad (2)$$

Proof: It follows directly from (1) that

$$f(x, n) = x^n + 1 + \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} x^k \frac{1 - (-1)^{\binom{n}{k}}}{2}.$$

By the well-known recursion for binomial coefficients,

$$\binom{n}{k} = \binom{n-1}{k} + \binom{n-1}{k-1},$$

so that

$$(-1)^{\binom{n}{k}} = \begin{cases} +1 & \text{if } (-1)^{\binom{n-1}{k-1}} = (-1)^{\binom{n-1}{k}} \\ -1 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Therefore,

$$\frac{1 - (-1)^{\binom{n}{k}}}{2} = |a_k - a_{k-1}| \quad \text{for } n-1 \geq k \geq 1.$$

Theorem 1: $f(x, 2^m - 1) = \sum_{k=0}^{2^m-1} x^k.$

Proof: The theorem is clearly satisfied for $m = 1$. Assume that

$$f(x, 2^m - 1) = \sum_{k=0}^{2^m-1} x^k = (a_{2^m-1}, \dots, a_0)_x,$$

where $a_k = 1$ for $2^m - 1 \geq k \geq 0$. By Lemma 1,

$$f(x, 2^m) = x^{2^m} f(x, 0) + f(x, 0).$$

We may apply (2) to both parts of $f(x, 2^m)$ independently for $2^m - 1$ times, and then add the results to obtain

$$f(x, 2^m + 2^m - 1) = x^{2^m} f(x, 2^m - 1) + f(x, 2^m - 1).$$

By the induction hypothesis,

$$f(x, 2^{m+1} - 1) = x^{2^m} \sum_{k=0}^{2^m-1} x^k + \sum_{k=0}^{2^m-1} x^k = \sum_{k=2^m}^{2^{m+1}-1} x^k + \sum_{k=0}^{2^m-1} x^k = \sum_{k=0}^{2^{m+1}-1} x^k.$$

Corollary 1 (Conjecture 1): $f(2, 2^m - 1) = 2^{2^m} - 1.$

Corollary 2: $f(x, 2^m) = x^{2^m} + 1.$

Proof: Apply (2) to the result of Theorem 1.

Corollary 3 (Conjecture 2): $f(2, 2^m) = 2^{2^m} + 1.$

Let $L(n)$ denote $2^{\lfloor \log_2 n \rfloor}$, where $\lfloor y \rfloor$ denotes the integer part of y . Examining each number $f(x, n)$ as a number to the base x , the following striking symmetry may be noticed: the sequence of the least significant $L(n)$ digits of $f(x, n)$, is equal to the sequence of the next most significant $L(n)$ digits of $f(x, n)$, which is also equal to the sequence of the least most significant $L(n)$ digits of $f(x, n - L(n))$. The following lemma, which is based on this symmetry provides another recursive scheme for generating the sequence $f(x, 0), f(x, 1), \dots$

Lemma 2: For $n > 0$, $f(x, n) \bmod(x^{L(n)}) = \left\lfloor \frac{f(x, n)}{x^{L(n)}} \right\rfloor = f(x, n - L(n)).$

Proof: We distinguish between the two cases of whether or not there exists an integer m such that $n = 2^m$. If $n = 2^m$ for some integer m , then from Corollary 2 it follows that $f(x, n) = x^n + 1$ and

$$f(x, n) \bmod(x^n) = 1 = \left\lfloor \frac{f(x, n)}{x^n} \right\rfloor.$$

Furthermore, since $L(n) = n$, it follows that $f(x, n - L(n)) = f(x, 0) = 1$, and the lemma is established for this case.

For the case $n \neq L(n)$, it follows from Corollary 2 that

$$f(x, L(n)) = x^{L(n)} f(x, 0) + f(x, 0).$$

Applying (2) to $f(x, L(n))$ for $n - L(n)$ times, we may treat the two parts independently and

$$f(x, n) = x^{L(n)} f(x, n - L(n)) + f(x, n - L(n)).$$

Consequently,

$$f(x, n) \bmod(x^{L(n)}) = \left\lfloor \frac{f(x, n)}{x^{L(n)}} \right\rfloor = f(x, n - L(n)).$$

We are now in a position to prove Conjecture 3.

Theorem 2 (Conjecture 3): $f(x, 2n + 1) = (x + 1)f(x, 2n)$.

Proof: Since $x + 1 = (1, 1)_x$, the theorem will follow from elementary rules of multiplication in the base x if we can prove that when $f(x, 2n)$ is expressed in the base x , no pair of consecutive digits are 1's. We will prove this property by induction. This is certainly true for $f(x, 0) = (1)_x$. For arbitrary $n > 0$, let

$$f(x, 2n) = (a_{2L(2n)-1}, \dots, a_0)_x.$$

By Lemma 2, each half of this number is equal to $f(x, 2n - L(2n))$ which, by the induction hypothesis, does not have two consecutive 1's when expressed in the base x . It remains to be shown that $a_{L(2n)-1} = 0$. But, by Lemma 2,

$$a_{L(2n)-1} = a_{2L(2n)-1},$$

and $a_{2L(2n)-1}$ cannot be equal to 1 because $f(x, 2n) < x^{2L(2n)-1}$.

We conclude with a final observation on the sequence of numbers $f(x, n)$. Examining the $2^m \times 2^m$ binary matrix in which the entry a_{ij} is the j th digit of $f(x, i - 1)$, we note that the matrix is symmetric about its major diagonal.

REFERENCE

1. H. W. Gould. "Exponential Binomial Coefficient Series." *Mathematica Mongaliae* 1, no. 4 (1961).

SOLUTIONS FOR GENERAL RECURRENCE RELATIONS

LEONARD E. FULLER

Kansas State University, Manhattan, KA 66502

1. STATEMENT OF THE PROBLEM

In a recent article [1], the author obtained representations for the solutions of certain r, s recurrence relations. In this paper we shall give representations for the solutions of general recurrence relations. In Section 4 we shall show that the results in [1] are a special case of the results of Sections 2 and 3 of this paper.

We first of all characterize all decompositions of an integer n , restricted to the first m positive integers. We define a multinomial from this that satisfies an m th-order recurrence relation with special initial conditions. Next the set of m positive integers is restricted to a subset A containing m , and a second multinomial that satisfies a recurrence relation with special initial conditions is defined.

In Section 3, we obtain solutions for comparable recurrence relations with general initial conditions. The final result gives us a solution for the general recurrence relation:

$$H_p = r_{a_1} H_{p-a_1} + \dots + r_{a_t} H_{p-a_t}; H_0, \dots, H_{1-a_t} \text{ arbitrary.}$$

2. BASIC m th-ORDER RECURRENCE RELATIONS

One of the classic concepts in the theory of numbers is that of partitions of the positive integers. One of the subcases considered is for the component integers to be the set of integers from 1 to m . In this case we denote the set of all partitions of n as $P(n; m)$. The number of elements in this set is $P_m(n)$. A given partition can be characterized by a set of integers k_i . That is,

$$n = 1k_1 + \dots + mk_m.$$

The integers k_i are referred to as the frequency of i in the given partitions. We refer to this given partition as $p(k, n; m)$.

For a given $p(k, n; m)$, we can represent n as a sum of integers from 1 to m in

$$\frac{(k_1 + \dots + k_m)!}{k_1! \dots k_m!}$$

ways. Each such representation is called a "decomposition of n " (some authors call them "compositions"). We denote this expression as $d_m(k, n)$. It is the number of decompositions of the partition $p(k, n; m)$.

This expression has a property that we shall find useful:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{(k_1 + \dots + k_m)!}{k_1! \dots k_m!} &= \frac{(k_1 + \dots + k_m - 1)!}{k_1! \dots k_m!} \sum_{s=1}^m k_s \\ &= \sum_{s=1}^m \frac{(k_1 + \dots + k_m - 1)!}{k_1! \dots (k_s - 1)! \dots k_m!}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.1)$$

Symbolically we have

$$d_m(k, n) = \sum_{s=1}^m d_m(k(s), n - s),$$

where $d_m(k(s), n-s) = 0$ if $k_s = 0$. Otherwise, it is the number of decompositions for the partition of $n-s$ where all the k_i are the same as for the k partition of n except that k_s is reduced by 1.

We use this number of decompositions to define a multinomial. We then show that it is the solution for a special recurrence relation. Let

$$U_n = \sum_{P(n;m)} d_m(k, n) r_1^{k_1} \dots r_m^{k_m},$$

that is, we sum over all partitions of n , a multinomial in r_1, \dots, r_m whose coefficients are the number of decompositions of the given partition. We can now prove our first theorem.

Theorem 2.1: The multinomial U_n satisfies the recurrence relation

$$U_t = \sum_{s=1}^m r_s U_{t-s}; \quad U_0 = 1, \quad U_{-1} = \dots = U_{1-m} = 0.$$

By applying property (1) to the definition of U_n , we have

$$\begin{aligned} U_n &= \sum_{P(n;m)} d_m(k, n) r_1^{k_1} \dots r_m^{k_m} \\ &= \sum_{P(n;m)} \sum_{s=1}^m d_m(k(s), n-s) r_1^{k_1} \dots r_m^{k_m} \\ &= \sum_{s=1}^m r_s \sum_{P(n-s;m)} d_m(k(s), n-s) r_1^{k_1} \dots r_s^{k_s-1} \dots r_m^{k_m} \\ &= \sum_{s=1}^m r_s U_{n-s}. \end{aligned}$$

We have used the fact that decreasing the frequency of s by 1 gives the restricted partitions of $n-s$. If s has a frequency of 0 for a given partition, then the corresponding term in the summation on s is 0.

For $n < m$, the frequencies for the integers $n+1$ to m would all be zero. Hence the summation can be terminated at n . However, if we choose $U_{-1} = \dots = U_{1-m} = 0$, then we do not need any restriction. This gives $m-1$ initial conditions. For the m th one, we shall choose $U_0 = 1$. This is logical, since all factorials are 0! and all exponents of the r_i are 0. This would give a value of 1. Hence the U_n does satisfy the prescribed recurrence relation.

What we have just proved for the case of the restricted partitions of n can be specialized for a proper subset $A = \{a_1, \dots, a_j\}$ of the integers from 1 to m . For convenience, we assume m is in A . The set of all partitions of n restricted to the set A we label $P(n; A)$. The number of elements in this set is $P_A(n)$. A given partition can be characterized by a set of frequencies k_i , so that

$$n = a_1 k_{a_1} + \dots + a_j k_{a_j}.$$

We refer to this given partition as $p(k, n; a)$.

For each such partition, we can represent n as a sum of integers in A in

$$\left(\sum_{i=1}^j k_{a_i} \right)! / \prod_{i=1}^j k_{a_i}!$$

ways. We denote this number as $d_A(k, n)$, that is, there are this many decompositions of the given partition, restricted to A . We can define the following multinomial

$$V_n = \sum_{P(n;A)} d_A(k, n) \prod_{q \in A} r_q^{k_q}.$$

We then have the following theorem.

Theorem 2.2: The multinomial V_n satisfies the recurrence relation

$$V_t = \sum_{s \in A} r_s V_{t-s}; \quad V_0 = 1, \quad V_{-1} = \dots = V_{1-m} = 0.$$

This theorem is a special case of Theorem 2.1. First of all, the restriction to the set A means that the frequencies $k_i = 0$ if $i \in A$. This means that for each partition of n there is no s corresponding to each such i in the solution. Hence s is summed only on A . Furthermore, since the corresponding r_i is always to the zero power, we drop these r_i in the multinomial. The number of initial conditions is dependent only on the largest integer in A , which is assumed to be m .

3. GENERAL RECURRENCE RELATIONS

Using the results of the last section, we can obtain solutions for recurrence relations with arbitrary initial conditions. We shall consider two cases that are comparable to those in the last section. Our solutions will involve the U_n and V_n , respectively.

Theorem 3.1: The solution for the recurrence relation

$$G_t = \sum_{s=1}^m r_s G_{t-s}; \quad G_0, \dots, G_{1-m} \text{ arbitrary}, \quad (3.1)$$

is given by

$$G_n = \sum_{j=1}^m \sum_{q=j}^m r_q U_{n-j} G_{j-q}. \quad (3.2)$$

For $n = 1$ in (3.2) the $U_{n-j} = U_{1-j}$ is zero except for $j = 1$. In this case $U_0 = 1$. The double summation reduces to

$$G_1 = \sum_{q=1}^m r_q G_{1-q},$$

which is (3.1) for $t = 1$ and $q = 2$.

For $n = 2$ in (3.2) the $U_{2-j} = 0$ for $j > 2$. We then have

$$G_2 = U_1 \sum_{q=1}^m r_q G_{1-q} + U_0 \sum_{q=2}^m r_q G_{2-q}.$$

From the previous section, we have that $U_0 = 1$ and $U_1 = r_1$. Also, by (3.1) the first sum is G_1 . Hence we have

$$G_2 = r_1 G_1 + \sum_{q=2}^m r_q G_{2-q} = \sum_{q=1}^m r_q G_{2-q},$$

which is (3.1) for $t = 2$ and $s = q$.

We assume that (3.2) is a valid solution for $n = 1, \dots, i-1$. For $t = i$ in (3.1),

$$G_i = \sum_{s=1}^m r_s G_{i-s}.$$

We have assumed solutions for all the G_{i-s} in this summation. Hence on substitution into this expression, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
G_i &= \sum_{s=1}^m r_s \sum_{j=1}^m \sum_{q=j}^m r_q U_{i-s-j} G_{j-q} \\
&= \sum_{j=1}^m \sum_{q=j}^m r_q \left(\sum_{s=1}^m r_s U_{i-s-j} \right) G_{j-q} \\
&= \sum_{j=1}^m \sum_{q=j}^m r_q U_{i-j} G_{j-q}.
\end{aligned}$$

At the last step we use the fact that U_n satisfies a recurrence relation. This final result is (3.2) for $n = i$.

We are now ready to present the solution to a general recurrence relation. We assume that set A has the properties of the last section.

Theorem 3.2: The solution for the recurrence relation

$$H_t = \sum_{s \in A} r_s H_{t-s}; \quad H_0, \dots, H_{1-m} \text{ arbitrary}, \quad (3.3)$$

is given by

$$H_n = \sum_{q \in A} \sum_{j=1}^q r_q V_{n-j} H_{j-q}. \quad (3.4)$$

This theorem follows from Theorem 3.1, just as Theorem 2.2 followed from Theorem 2.1. For convenience, we have interchanged the order of summations in the solution so that it is easier to adapt to the restriction on q .

4. SOME SPECIAL CASES

In this section we shall consider some special cases of the results of Sections 2 and 3. They are for both the U_n and G_n relations for $m = 2$.

The restricted partitions of n for $m = 2$ would be of the form $n = k_1 + 2k_2$. The summation over all such partitions can be represented by a summation on j when $j = k_2$. Then $k_1 = n - 2j$, and the summation is from 0 to $[n/2]$. The number of decompositions for a given partition would be given by

$$d_2(k, n) = \frac{(n - 2j + j)!}{(n - 2j)!j!} = \binom{n-j}{j}.$$

The solution for U_n in this case is

$$U_n = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor} \binom{n-j}{j} r_1^{n-2j} r_2^j.$$

For the more general G_n relation we have

$$\begin{aligned}
G_n &= \sum_{j=1}^2 \sum_{q=j}^2 r_q U_{n-j} G_{j-q} = (r_1 U_{n-1} G_0 + r_2 U_{n-1} G_{-1}) + (r_2 U_{n-2} G_0) \\
&= (r_1 U_{n-1} + r_2 U_{n-2}) G_0 + r_2 U_{n-1} G_{-1} = U_n G_0 + r_2 U_{n-1} G_{-1}.
\end{aligned}$$

Substituting in the solution for U_n and U_{n-1} ,

$$G_n = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor} \binom{n-j}{j} r_1^{n-2j} r_2^j G_0 + \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n-1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{n-1-j}{j} r_1^{n-1-2j} r_2^{j+1} G_{-1}.$$

We change the second index of summation by replacing $j + 1$ by j , as follows:

$$G_n = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{n}{2} \rfloor} \binom{n-j}{j} r_1^{n-2j} r_2^j G_0 + \sum_{j=1}^{\lfloor \frac{n+1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{n-j}{j-1} r_1^{n+1-2j} r_2^j G_{-1}.$$

The author gave representations for some special recurrence relations in a previous paper [1]. We shall now show that these were particular cases of the U_n and G_n relations for $m = 2$.

The first relation presented was a generalized Fibonacci sequence,

$$G_k = rG_{k-1} + sG_{k-2}; \quad G_0 = 0, \quad G_1 = 1,$$

which has the solution

$$G_k = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{k-1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-1-j}{j} r^{k-1-2j} s^j.$$

We observe that both our indexing and the constants of the relations are different. To reconcile them, we replace n by $k-1$, r_1 by r , and r_2 by s in the U_n solution. This gives us the desired result.

As a special case, when $r = s = 1$ we have the Fibonacci sequence. The general term would be given by

$$F_k = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{k-1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-1-j}{j},$$

which is the number of decompositions of $k-1$ restricted to 1 and 2.

Another sequence presented in [1] is the generalized Lucas sequence M_k , for which

$$M_k = rM_{k-1} + sM_{k-2}; \quad M_0 = 2, \quad M_1 = r.$$

To obtain the solution we specialize the G_n for $m = 2$. We replace n by $k-1$, r_1 by r , r_2 by s , G_0 by r , and G_{-1} by 2. We have

$$M = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{k-1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-1-j}{j} r^{k-1-2j} s^j r + \sum_{j=1}^{\lfloor \frac{k-1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-1-j}{j-1} r^{k-2j} s^j 2.$$

We observe that the powers of r and s in both sums are the same. Hence we combine them into a single sum. It can be verified that this yields

$$M_k = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{k}{2} \rfloor} \frac{k}{k-j} \binom{k-j}{j} r^{k-2j} s^j,$$

which is the solution given in [1].

The third relation discussed in [1] is

$$U_k = rU_{k-1} + sU_{k-2}; \quad U_1, U_0 \text{ arbitrary.}$$

We can identify this with our G_n relation if we let $n = k-1$, $r_1 = r$, $r_2 = s$, $G_0 = U_1$, and $G_{-1} = U_0$. This gives

$$U_k = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{k-1}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-1-j}{j} r^{k-1-2j} s^j U_1 + \sum_{j=1}^{\lfloor \frac{k}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-1-j}{j-1} r^{k-2j} s^j U_0.$$

Applying some algebra to combine the two sum yields the following solution:

$$U_k = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor \frac{k}{2} \rfloor} \binom{k-j}{j} \frac{(k-2j)U_1 + jrU_0}{k-j} r^{k-1-2j} s^j.$$

This can also be verified directly.

In a future paper we shall show that there are generating functions for the four recurrence relations given in this paper. These can also be used for the special cases of this section. We can use them to generate with a computer as many terms in a given recurrence relation as desired.

REFERENCE

1. L. E. Fuller. "Representations for r, s Recurrence Relations." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 18 (1980):129-135.

ON GENERATING FUNCTIONS AND DOUBLE SERIES EXPANSIONS

M. E. COHEN and H. S. SUN

California State University, Fresno, CA 93740

1. INTRODUCTION

Recently, Weiss *et al.* [9] gave a direct proof of a result due to Narayana [8] and Kreweras [6]:

$$\sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} \frac{\binom{r+s-1}{r} \binom{r+s-1}{s}}{r+s-1} u^r v^s = \frac{1}{2} [1 - u - v - (1 - 2(u+v) + (u-v)^2)^{1/2}]. \quad (1.1)$$

A special case of Theorem 1a of this paper is a five-parameter generalization of (1.1):

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{u^k v^p}{(\alpha+1+gk+hp)} \binom{\alpha+gk+k+hp}{k} \binom{\beta+gck+hcp+p}{p} \\ = \frac{(1+z)^{\alpha+1} (1+y)^{\beta+1}}{(\alpha+1)} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, 1+\beta-c-\alpha c, \\ (\alpha+1+h)/h, \end{matrix} -y \right], \end{aligned} \quad (1.2)$$

where

$$u = \frac{z}{(1+z)^{g+1} (1+y)^{ge}}, \quad v = \frac{y}{(1+z)^h (1+y)^{he+1}}.$$

See Luke [7, Sec. 6.10] for a discussion of Padé approximation for the hypergeometric function on the right-hand side of (1.2). Letting

$$g = -1, h = -1, c = 1, \alpha = -2, \text{ and } \beta = -2$$

in (1.2) and some manipulation will give (1.1).

Equation (1.2) also appears to be an extension of the important equation (6.1) of Gould [5], to which it reduces for $z = 0$.

An interesting simplification of (1.2) is the case $\beta = \alpha c + c - 1$, giving:

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{u^k v^p}{(\alpha+1+gk+hp)} \binom{\alpha+gk+k+hp}{k} \binom{\alpha c + c - 1 + gck + hcp + p}{p} \\ = \frac{(1+z)^{\alpha+1} (1+y)^{\alpha c + c}}{(1+\alpha)}. \end{aligned} \quad (1.3)$$

The importance of these types of expansions is the connection with Jacobi polynomials. Now, Carlitz [1] gave the important generating function

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\alpha}{n+\alpha} P_n^{(\alpha, -1)}(x) r^n = 2^\alpha (1-r+R)^{-\alpha}, \quad (1.4)$$

where

$$R = (1 - 2xr + r^2)^{1/2} \quad \text{and} \quad P_n^{(\alpha, \beta)}(x) = \binom{\alpha+n}{n} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} -n, n+\alpha+\beta+1, \\ \alpha+1, \end{matrix} \frac{1-x}{2} \right].$$

A special case of Theorem 1a in this paper gives

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi^n}{(\sigma+\tau+1+an+bn+n)} P_n^{(\sigma+an, \tau+bn)}(w) \\ &= \frac{1}{(\sigma+\tau+1)} (1-z)^{\sigma+\tau+1} (1-y)^{-\sigma} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, \{(1+a)(1+\tau) - \sigma b\}/(1+a+b), \\ (\sigma+\tau+a+b+2)/(a+b+1), \end{matrix} y \right], \end{aligned} \quad (1.5)$$

where y and z are defined by

$$\begin{aligned} (1-w)/2 &= z(1-y)/[y(1-z)], \\ \xi &= y(1-y)^a/(1-z)^{a+b+1}, \end{aligned}$$

and

$$|\xi| < 1, |y| < 1, |z| < 1.$$

By letting $a = b = 0$ and $\sigma = -1$, (1.5) reduces to (1.4). See [3] for another generalization of (1.4), and some discussion regarding its importance.

A special case of interest occurs for $\tau = (\sigma b - a - 1)/(1+a)$, giving:

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi^n}{(\sigma+\tau+1+an+bn+n)} P_n^{(\sigma+an, \tau+bn)}(w) = \frac{(1-z)^{\sigma+\tau+1} (1-y)^{-\sigma}}{\sigma+\tau+1}. \quad (1.6)$$

Equation (1.5) is also a three-parameter extension of another equation of Carlitz [1, Eq. 8]. Letting $a = 0$ in (1.5) gives equation (1) of Cohen [4].

A special case of Theorem 1b of this paper yields the expression:

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{u^k v^p}{(\beta+1+gck+hcp)} \binom{\alpha+gk+k+hp}{k} \binom{\beta+gck+hcp+p}{p} \\ &= \frac{(1+z)^{\alpha+1} (1+y)^{\beta+1}}{(\beta+1)} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} \frac{c-\beta-1+\alpha c}{c}, 1, \\ \frac{\beta+1+gc}{gc}, \end{matrix} -z \right] \end{aligned} \quad (1.7)$$

where

$$u = \frac{z}{(1+z)^{g+1} (1+y)^{gc}}, \quad v = \frac{y}{(1+z)^k (1+y)^{hc+1}}.$$

The analogous expression for the Jacobi polynomial takes the form

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi^n}{(\sigma+an+n)} P_n^{(\sigma+an, \tau+bn)}(w) \\ &= \sigma^{-1} (1-z)^{\sigma+\tau+1} (1-y)^{-\sigma} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, (1+\tau)(1+a) - \sigma b/(1+a), \\ (\sigma+a+1)/a, \end{matrix} z \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (1.8)$$

Letting $\tau = -1$, $a = b = 0$, the Carlitz formula given by our equation (1.4)

presents itself. Also, letting $b = 0$ in (1.8) gives essentially a main result in [2, Eq. (1.1)]. [The variables y and z are defined in (1.5).]

The statement and proof of Theorem 1 follow in the next section.

2. STATEMENT AND PROOF OF THEOREM 1

Theorem 1: For a, b, c, α , and β complex numbers and ℓ, ℓ' , and j nonnegative integers:

$$\begin{aligned} a. \quad & \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi_1^k \xi_2^p \binom{\alpha + ak + k + bp}{k} \binom{\beta + ack + bcp + p}{p}}{(\alpha + ak + bp + \ell + 1) \binom{(\alpha + ak + bp + \ell + 1 + j\ell')/j}{\ell'}} \\ & = (1 - z)^{\alpha + \ell + 1} (1 - y)^{\beta + 1} \times \\ & \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \sum_{k=0}^{\ell + jr} \frac{(-1)^r (z)^k (1 - z)^{jr - k} \binom{\ell'}{r} \binom{\ell + jr}{k} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, 1 - c - c - c + -jcr, \\ (\alpha + 1 + jr + ak + b + \ell)/b, \end{matrix} \right]}{y}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.1)$$

$$\begin{aligned} b. \quad & \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi_1^k \xi_2^p \binom{\alpha + ak + k + bp}{k} \binom{\beta + ack + bcp + p}{p}}{(\beta + ack + bcp + \ell + 1) \binom{(\beta + 1 + \ell + ack + bcp + j\ell')/j}{\ell'}} \\ & = (1 - y)^{\beta + 1 + \ell} (1 - z)^{\alpha + 1} \times \\ & \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \sum_{p=0}^{\ell + jr} \frac{(-1)^r (y)^p (1 - y)^{jr - p} \binom{\ell'}{r} \binom{\ell + jr}{p} {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, (c - \beta - 1 + ac - jr - \ell)/c, \\ (\ell + \beta + 1 + jr + bcp)/(ac), \end{matrix} \right]}{z}, \end{aligned} \quad (2.2)$$

where $\binom{a}{n} = \frac{\Gamma(a+1)}{n! \Gamma(a-n+1)}$, and y and z are defined through

$$\begin{aligned} \xi_1 &= \frac{-z}{(1 - z)^{\alpha + 1} (1 - y)^{\alpha c}}, \quad \xi_2 = \frac{-y}{(1 - z)^b (1 - y)^{bc + 1}} \\ |y| &< 1, \quad |z| < 1, \quad |\xi_1| < 1, \quad \text{and} \quad |\xi_2| < 1. \end{aligned}$$

Corollary 1a: Reduction of Theorem 1a for the Jacobi polynomial gives:

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi^n}{(\sigma + \tau + 1 + \ell + an + bn + n) \binom{\sigma + \tau + 1 + \ell + an + bn + n + j}{j}} P_n^{(\sigma + an, \tau + bn)}(w) \\ &= \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \sum_{k=0}^{\ell + jr} \frac{(-z)^k (1 - z)^{\ell + jr - k + \sigma + \tau + 1} (1 - y)^{-\sigma} (-\ell')_r (-\ell - jr)_k}{k! r! \ell'! (\ell + jr + (1 + a + b)k + \sigma + \tau + 1)} \times \\ & \quad {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, \frac{(1 + a)(1 + \ell + \tau + jr) - \sigma b}{1 + a + b}, \\ \frac{\ell + jr + (1 + a + b)k + \sigma + \tau + a + b + 2}{1 + a + b}, \end{matrix} \right] y. \end{aligned} \quad (2.3)$$

$|y| < 1$, $|z| < 1$, and $|\xi| < 1$, where $(a + 1)_n / n! = \binom{a + n}{n}$, and y and z are defined in (1.5).

Corollary 1b: Reduction of Theorem 1b for the Jacobi polynomial gives:

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\xi^n}{(\sigma + n(1+a) - \ell) \left(\frac{\ell - \sigma - (1+a) + j}{j} \right)_{\ell'}} P_n^{(\sigma+an, \tau+bn)}(w) \\ &= \frac{(1-z)^{\sigma+\tau+1}}{\ell'!} (1-y)^{-\sigma+\ell} \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \sum_{p=0}^{\ell+jr} \frac{(-y)^p (1-y)^{jr+p} (-\ell')_r (-\ell-jr)_p}{p! r! (\sigma + p(1+a) - \ell - jr)} \times \\ & \quad {}_2F_1 \left[\begin{matrix} 1, \frac{(1+a)(1+\tau+\ell+jr) - b(\sigma - \ell - jr)}{(1+a)} \\ \sigma + (1+a)p - \ell - jr + a + 1 \\ (1+a) \end{matrix} ; z \right], \end{aligned} \quad (2.4)$$

where y and z are defined in (1.5).

Proof of Theorem 1a: Now consider the expression

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n y^m}{n! m!} \int_0^1 x^{\sigma \ell} (1-x^{jc})^{\ell'} \delta^n [x^{\alpha c + n c - \beta} D^m \{ (1-x^{\alpha c})^n (1-x^{bc})^m x^{\beta+m} \}] dF \quad (2.5)$$

$$\left(\text{where } F \equiv x^c, D \equiv \frac{d}{dF}, \delta \equiv \frac{d}{dF} \right)$$

$$= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n y^m}{n! m!} \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \frac{(-\ell')_r (-\ell-jr)_n}{r!} \int_0^1 x^{\sigma \ell + jcr + \alpha c - \beta} D^m [(1-x^{\alpha c})^n (1-x^{bc})^m x^{\beta+m}] dF \quad (2.6)$$

where $(\alpha)_m = \Gamma(\alpha+m)/\Gamma(\alpha)$, quotient of gamma functions. Equation (2.6) is deduced from (2.5) by expanding $(1-x^{jc})^{\ell'}$ and integrating the resulting equation by parts n times. Equation (2.6) may, in turn, be reduced to

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n y^m}{n! m!} \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \frac{(-\ell')_r (-\ell-jr)_n (-n)_k (-m)_p (\beta+1+ack+bcp)_m}{r! k! p! (\ell+1+jr+\alpha+ak+bp)} \quad (2.7)$$

The evaluation is achieved through a further integration by parts m times, expansions of $(1-x^{\alpha c})^n$ and $(1-x^{bc})^m$, and subsequent integration. By applying the double series transform to (2.7), one obtains

$$\sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-z)^k (-y)^p z^n y^m (-\ell')_r (-\ell-jr+k)_n (-\ell-ar)_k (\beta+1+p+bcp+ack)_m}{n! m! k! p! r! (\ell+\alpha+1+jr+ak+bp)} \quad (2.8)$$

$$= \sum_{r=0}^{\ell'} \sum_{k=0}^{\ell+jr} \sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-z)^k (-y)^p (-\ell')_r (-\ell-jr)_k \Gamma(\beta+1+p+bcp+ack) (1-z)^{\ell+jr-k}}{r! k! p! \Gamma(\beta+1+ack+bcp) (\ell+\alpha+1+jr+ak+bp) (1-y)^{\beta+1+p+bcp+ack}} \quad (2.9)$$

We now return to our original expression (2.5) and proceed with its evaluation through a modified approach. Consider the operator and its expansion:

$$\begin{aligned} & \delta^n [x^{\alpha c + n c - \beta} D^m \{ (1-x^{\alpha c})^n (1-x^{bc})^m x^{\beta+m} \}] \\ &= \sum_{p=0}^m \sum_{k=0}^n \frac{(-n)_k (-m)_p \Gamma(\beta+m+1+ack+bcp) \Gamma(\alpha+n+1+ak+bp)}{k! p! \Gamma(\beta+1+ack+bcp) \Gamma(\alpha+1+ak+bp)}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.10)$$

With the aid of (2.10), (2.5) may be reduced to give:

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n y^m}{n! m!} \sum_{m=0}^p \sum_{k=0}^n \frac{(-n)_k (-m)_p \Gamma(\beta + m + 1 + ack + bcp) \Gamma(\alpha + n + 1 + ak + bp)}{k! p! \Gamma(\beta + 1 + ack + bcp) \Gamma(\alpha + 1 + ak + bp)} \\ \times \frac{\ell'! \Gamma[(\alpha + ak + bp + \ell + 1)/j]}{(j) \Gamma[(\alpha + ak + bp + \ell + 1 + j\ell' + j)/j]}. \quad (2.11)$$

Using the double series transformation and reducing the subsequent series over n and m gives:

$$\sum_{p=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-z)^k (-y)^p \Gamma(\beta + 1 + ack + bcp + p) \Gamma(\alpha + 1 + ak + k + bp) \Gamma[(\alpha + ak + bp + \ell + 1)/j] \ell'!}{k! p! (1-z)^{\alpha+1+ak+k+bp} (1-y)^{\beta+1+ack+bcp+p} \Gamma(\alpha + 1 + ak + bp) \Gamma(\beta + 1 + ack + bcp)} \\ \times \frac{1}{(j) \Gamma[(\alpha + ak + bp + \ell + 1 + j\ell' + j)/j]}. \quad (2.12)$$

Now equating the expressions (2.9) and (2.12) together with some simple transformations yields the required Theorem 1a.

Proof of Theorem 1b: The procedure adopted is similar to that for Theorem 1a. The modified integral is

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n y^m}{n! m!} \int_0^1 x^{\ell+\beta+1-\alpha-\epsilon} (1-xj)^{\ell'} \delta^n [x^{\alpha+\epsilon} - \beta D^m \{ (1-x^{\alpha\epsilon})^n (1-x^{\beta\epsilon})^m x^{\beta+m} \}] dF,$$

where the previous definitions are in effect. The details of the proof follow the proof of Theorem 1a to give expression (2.2).

REFERENCES

1. L. Carlitz. "Some Generating Functions for the Jacobi Polynomials." *Boll. U.M.I.* (3), 16 (1961):150-155.
2. M. E. Cohen. "Generating Functions for the Jacobi Polynomial." *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.* 57 (1976):271-275.
3. M. E. Cohen. "On Jacobi Functions and Multiplication Theorems for Integrals of Bessel Functions." *J. Math. Anal. and Appl.* 57 (1977):469-475.
4. M. E. Cohen. "Some Extensions of Carlitz on Cyclic Sums and Generating Functions." *J. Math. Anal. and Appl.* 60 (1977):493-501.
5. H. W. Gould. "A Series Transformation for Finding Convolution Identities." *Duke Math. J.* 28 (1961):193-202.
6. G. Kreweras. "Traitement simultané du 'Problème de Young' et du 'Problème de Simon Newcomb.'" *Cahiers du Bureau Universitaire de Recherche Opérationnelle* (Serie Recherche, Paris), 10 (1967):23-31.
7. Y. L. Luke. *Mathematical Functions and Their Approximations*. New York: Academic Press, 1975.
8. T. V. Narayana. "A Note on a Double Series Expansion." *Cahiers du Bureau Universitaire de Recherche Opérationnelle* (Serie Recherche, Paris), 13 (1969):19-24.
9. G. H. Weiss & M. Dishon. "A Method for the Evaluation of Certain Sums Involving Binomial Coefficients." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 14 (1976):75-77,

AN EQUIVALENT FORM OF BENFORD'S LAW

JAMES V. PETERS

C. W. Post Center of L.I. University, Greenvale, NY 11548

Benford's law states that the probability of a positive integer having 1st digit d is given by

$$Pr(j = d) = \log_{10}(1 + 1/d). \quad (1)$$

In terms of the cumulative probability distribution, (1) is restated as

$$Pr(j < d) = \log_{10} d.$$

This result was first noted by Benford [1] in 1938 and has since been extended to counting bases other than 10 as well as to certain subsets, called Benford sequences, of the positive integers. Geometric progressions or, more generally, integer solutions of finite difference equations are examples of Benford sequences that have received considerable attention in the literature, e.g., [2]. This interest is due, in part, to the fact that the Fibonacci and Lucas numbers are obtained as solutions of the finite difference equation

$$x_{n+2} = x_{n+1} + x_n.$$

We refer the reader to [3] for an extensive bibliography concerning this and other aspects of the 1st-digit problem.

Since the consideration of varying counting bases will be of concern to us here, we introduce the following notation. We write $Pr(j < d)_b$ for the probability of $j < d$ when numbers are represented as digits in base $b \geq 2$. In this notation, Benford's law states that

$$Pr(j < d)_b = \log_b d, \text{ for } d \leq b. \quad (2)$$

The purpose of this paper is to establish that, for the set of positive integers, (2) is equivalent to the following "monotonicity statement":

$$\text{If } b \leq b', \text{ then } Pr(j < d)_b \geq Pr(j < d)_{b'}.$$

While this statement still makes sense for $b < d \leq b'$, we confine our attention to $d \leq b$. In so doing, it follows immediately that the monotonicity statement is implied by Benford's law as given in (2).

To reverse the above implication for the positive integers, we need two lemmas. Both of these results could be established via the functional equation

$$Pr(j < a) + Pr(j < c) = Pr(j < ac),$$

which is valid whenever the positive integers a and c as well as their product divide b . Instead of this approach, we present arguments based on a counting machine that randomly generates numbers in varying counting bases. The idea is as follows. It is clear that in binary ($b = 2$) the 1st digit must be 1. Consequently, if we represent numbers in oct 1 ($b = 8$) where each digit is denoted by a string of three binary symbols, then the 1st digit is determined by simply ascertaining the length of the binary representation modulo 3. Since the possible lengths (mod 3) of the binary representation of a randomly chosen number are equally likely, we obtain some probabilities. More generally, we have the following.

Lemma 1: Let $m, n \geq 0$, $a \geq 2$ denote integers. If randomly chosen positive integers are represented in base $b = a^n$, then

$$Pr(j < a^m) = m/n, \quad m \leq n. \quad (3)$$

Proof: We denote by $b_1 b_2 \dots b_k$ the random number as represented in base b . Thus, $0 \leq b_i < b$ for $i = 1, 2, \dots, k$ and $b_1 \neq 0$. Rewrite each b_i as $a_{1i} a_{2i} \dots a_{ni}$, where the a_i 's represent digits in base a . This yields a string of nk digits each of which is less than a . Removing the 0 digits occurring at the beginning of this, we obtain the base a representation of the random number. Suppose this base a representation contains x digits. We solve the congruence relation $x = y \pmod{n}$ where $0 \leq y < n$. If $y = 0$, the 1st digit j (in base b) satisfies $a^{n-1} \leq j < a^n = b$. For any other value of y , the 1st digit satisfies $a^{y-1} \leq j < a^y$. Since each value of y is equally likely, we obtain

$$\Pr(a^{y-1} \leq j < a^y) = \Pr(a^{n-1} \leq j < a^n) = 1/n. \quad (4)$$

Equation (3) follows immediately from (4). This completes the proof.

By a simple variation of the combinatoric argument used in the proof of Lemma 1, we next obtain a result that permits the comparison of the distribution of the 1st digit with respect to two different bases.

Lemma 2: Using the notation introduced above, we have

$$\Pr(j < d)_b = m \Pr(j < d)_{b^m}.$$

Proof: A random number represented by k digits in base b^m is rewritten as a string of km digits in base b . As in Lemma 1, we delete all consecutive zeros from the left-hand side of the km digits. This yields a base b representation of the number. For $j < d$, in base b , there are m equally likely possible values for the position of j in the base b^m representation. Since the position of j is independent of its value, we conclude that the probability of $j < d$ in base b^m is $1/m$ times the corresponding probability in base b . This is equivalent to the statement of Lemma 2 and completes the proof.

To deduce Benford's law from the lemmas, we proceed as follows. According to Lemma 2,

$$\Pr(j < d)_b = m \Pr(j < d)_{b^m}. \quad (5)$$

The monotonicity statement and Lemma 1 yield the inequality

$$\frac{1}{n} = \Pr(j < d)_{d^n} \geq \Pr(j < d)_{b^m} \geq \Pr(j < d)_{d^{n+1}} = \frac{1}{n+1} \quad (6)$$

whenever

$$d^n \leq b^m \leq d^{n+1}. \quad (7)$$

By the euclidean algorithm, (7) is always satisfied by some $n \geq 0$ for any given values of $b > d > 1$ and $m \geq 0$. Combining (5) and (6), we obtain

$$\frac{m}{n} \geq \Pr(j < d)_b \geq \frac{m}{n+1}.$$

Now let $m \rightarrow \infty$ and choose n so as to maintain the validity of (7). Taking logarithms in (7), this implies that

$$\frac{m}{n+1} \leq \log_b d \leq \frac{m}{n}.$$

To show that $m/n \rightarrow \log_b d$ as $m \rightarrow \infty$, we simply note that

$$\frac{m}{n} - \frac{m}{n+1} = \frac{1}{n} \left(\frac{m}{n+1} \right) \leq \frac{1}{n} \log_b d \rightarrow 0.$$

This establishes (2).

The proofs presented here rely heavily upon properties of the set of positive integers which are not shared by other Benford sequences. As such, it is worth commenting on the more general situation. By definition, any Benford sequence satisfies (2) and, as noted above, this implies the monotonicity statement. The lemmas are also valid although the proofs given above are not. To

give a more interesting example, consider the geometric progression $\{a^k\}$ which constitutes a Benford sequence in base b if and only if $a \neq b^{p/q}$ (p, q integers). Setting $a = 3$ and $b' = 9$, we obtain a subset of the positive integers which is not a Benford sequence. Moreover, $Pr(j < 4)_9 = 1$ for the geometric progression $\{3^k\}$. Since $\{3^k\}$ is a Benford sequence in base $b = 8$, we may apply Lemma 1 with $a = 2$, $m = 2$, $n = 3$ to yield $Pr(j < 4)_8 = 2/3$. A comparison of the above probabilities for $b = 8$ and $b' = 9$ shows that the monotonicity statement is false for this example.

REFERENCES

1. F. Benford. "The Law of Anomalous Numbers." *Proc. Amer. Phil. Soc.* 78 (1938): 551-557.
2. J. L. Brown & R. L. Duncan. "Modulo One Uniform Distribution of the Sequence of Logarithms of Certain Recursive Sequences." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 8 (1970): 482-486.
3. R. A. Raimi. "The First Digit Problem." *Amer. Math. Monthly* 83 (1976): 521-538.

A NEW TYPE MAGIC LATIN 3-CUBE OF ORDER TEN

JOSEPH ARKIN

197 Old Nyack Turnpike, Spring Valley, NY 10977

K. SINGH

University of New Brunswick, Fredericton, N.B. E3B 5A3, Canada

A Latin 3-cube of order n is an $n \times n \times n$ cube (n rows, n columns, and n files) in which the numbers $0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1$ are entered so that each number occurs exactly once in each row, column, and file. A magic Latin 3-cube of order n is an arrangement of n^3 integers in three orthogonal Latin 3-cubes, each of order n (where every ordered triple $000, 001, \dots, n-1, n-1, n-1$ occurs) such that the sum of the entries in every row, every column, and every file, in each of the four major diagonals (diameters) and in each of the n^2 broken major diagonals is the same; namely, $\frac{1}{2}n(n^3 + 1)$. We shall list the cubes in terms of n squares of order n that form its different levels from the top square 0 down through (inclusively) square 1, square 2, ..., square $n-1$. We define a broken major diagonal as a path (route) which begins in square 0 and goes through the n different levels (square 0, square 1, ..., square $n-1$) of the cube and passes through precisely one cell in each of the n squares in such a way that no two cells the broken major diagonal traverses are ever in the same file.

The sum of the entries in the n cells that make up a broken major diagonal equals $\frac{1}{2}n(n^3 + 1)$. A complete system consists of n^2 broken major diagonals, where each broken major diagonal emanates from a cell in square 0, and thus the n^2 broken major diagonals traverse each of the n^3 cells of the cube in n^2 distinct routes. The cube is initially constructed as a Latin 3-cube in which the numbers are expressed in the scale of n ($0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1$). However, after adding 1 throughout and converting the numbers to base 10, we have the n^3 numbers $1, 2, \dots, n^3$ where the sum of the entries in every row, every column, and every file in each of the four major diagonals, and in each of the n^2 broken major diagonals is the same; namely, $\frac{1}{2}n(n^3 + 1)$.

In this paper, for the first time in mathematics, we construct a magic Latin 3-cube of order ten. In this case, the sum of the numbers in every row,

every column, and every file in each of the four major diagonals, and in each of the 10^2 broken major diagonals is the same; namely, $\frac{1}{2}(10)(10^3 + 1) = 5005$.

In Chart 1 we list (by columns) the coordinates of the cells through which 10 broken major diagonals pass. It should be noted that the first digit of the coordinates denotes the row, the second digit the column, and at the right side of each row is the square number in which each cell is to be found. Each one of the 10 broken major diagonals is found under one of the 10 columns, that is, in Chart 1 we find listed by columns 10 broken major diagonals, where each column denotes one broken major diagonal. For example, under column 0, we find the coordinates 00, 99, 55, 66, 11, 88, 77, 22, 44, and 33. These cells determine one broken major diagonal. After adding 1 to each number found in the corresponding 10 cells in the 10 squares, we get

$$764 + 373 + 791 + 588 + 707 + 026 + 445 + 340 + 612 + 359 = \frac{1}{2}(10)(10^3 + 1) = 5005.$$

Now, in order to find the remaining 90 broken major diagonals that emanate from square 0, we must construct nine more charts to get Chart 1, Chart 2, ..., Chart X. We need only show (as an example) how to construct Chart 2 from Chart 1 and the Key Chart, since the remaining eight charts (Chart 2, ..., Chart X) are constructed in exactly the same way.

In the Key Chart under column I are the numbers in the same order that are found in Chart 1 under column 0.

In Chart 1, we define the rows as follows:

```
a (00) row = 00 16 29 35 42 53 64 71 87 98 square 0
a (99) row = 99 41 62 56 84 75 23 10 08 37 square 1
.....
a (33) row = 33 28 45 04 79 86 90 57 61 12 square 9
```

Thus, in the Key Chart we have under column I a (00) row, a (99) row, ..., and a (33) row, which is, of course, a restatement in a shorter form of the entire Chart 1.

Now, in the Key Chart, each number under column II which is identical to a number under column I (in the Key Chart) represents the identical row found in Chart 1. Therefore, Chart 2 is written as:

```
(11) row: 11 89 76 27 58 94 32 03 40 65 square 0
(33) row: 33 28 45 04 79 86 90 57 61 12 square 1
.....
(99) row: 99 41 62 56 84 75 23 10 08 37 square 9
```

Then the columns of Chart 2 give 10 more broken major diagonals.

We can find the remaining eight charts—Chart 3, Chart 4, ..., Chart X—in exactly the same way as Chart 2, using the Key Chart in conjunction with Chart 1. (The charts are presented on the following pages.)

It should be noted here that Chart 1 is constructed by superposing two orthogonal Latin squares of order ten. Now, since it is impossible to superpose two Latin squares of order n when $n = 2$ or 6 , we may state that this type of magic Latin 3-cube is impossible for order 2 and for order 6.

In the near future, we shall present a more comprehensive general paper in which we consider the general order $4m + 2$ and the powers of prime numbers.

CHART 1

| 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 | |
|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----|----------|
| 00 | 16 | 29 | 35 | 42 | 53 | 64 | 71 | 87 | 98 | square 0 |
| 99 | 41 | 62 | 56 | 84 | 75 | 23 | 10 | 08 | 37 | square 1 |
| 55 | 97 | 38 | 19 | 60 | 02 | 81 | 24 | 73 | 46 | square 2 |
| 66 | 50 | 93 | 82 | 07 | 21 | 15 | 48 | 39 | 74 | square 3 |
| 11 | 89 | 76 | 27 | 58 | 94 | 32 | 03 | 40 | 65 | square 4 |
| 88 | 72 | 01 | 43 | 95 | 67 | 59 | 36 | 14 | 20 | square 5 |
| 77 | 34 | 80 | 68 | 13 | 49 | 06 | 92 | 25 | 51 | square 6 |
| 22 | 05 | 54 | 70 | 31 | 18 | 47 | 69 | 96 | 83 | square 7 |
| 44 | 63 | 17 | 91 | 26 | 30 | 78 | 85 | 52 | 09 | square 8 |
| 33 | 28 | 45 | 04 | 79 | 86 | 90 | 57 | 61 | 12 | square 9 |

KEY CHART FOR 100 BROKEN MAJOR DIAGONALS

| I | II | III | IV | V | VI | VII | VIII | IX | X | |
|----|----|-----|----|----|----|-----|------|----|----|----------|
| 00 | 11 | 22 | 33 | 44 | 55 | 66 | 77 | 88 | 99 | square 0 |
| 99 | 33 | 88 | 44 | 22 | 00 | 77 | 55 | 11 | 66 | square 1 |
| 55 | 22 | 33 | 00 | 77 | 11 | 88 | 99 | 66 | 44 | square 2 |
| 66 | 44 | 77 | 55 | 00 | 88 | 99 | 11 | 33 | 22 | square 3 |
| 11 | 00 | 99 | 77 | 66 | 44 | 33 | 22 | 55 | 88 | square 4 |
| 88 | 55 | 11 | 66 | 99 | 33 | 22 | 44 | 00 | 77 | square 5 |
| 77 | 88 | 66 | 99 | 11 | 22 | 55 | 00 | 44 | 33 | square 6 |
| 22 | 66 | 44 | 88 | 55 | 99 | 00 | 33 | 77 | 11 | square 7 |
| 44 | 77 | 00 | 22 | 33 | 66 | 11 | 88 | 99 | 55 | square 8 |
| 33 | 99 | 55 | 11 | 88 | 77 | 44 | 66 | 22 | 00 | square 9 |

MAGIC LATIN 3-CUBE OF ORDER TEN

Square Number 0

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 763 | 886 | 540 | 979 | 015 | 428 | 601 | 354 | 232 | 197 |
| 1 | 279 | 963 | 097 | 654 | 832 | 301 | 728 | 186 | 440 | 515 |
| 2 | 897 | 340 | 463 | 201 | 579 | 632 | 154 | 915 | 028 | 786 |
| 3 | 140 | 454 | 901 | 063 | 628 | 715 | 879 | 297 | 586 | 332 |
| 4 | 932 | 228 | 754 | 815 | 163 | 086 | 597 | 401 | 379 | 640 |
| 5 | 328 | 697 | 132 | 740 | 486 | 563 | 215 | 079 | 954 | 801 |
| 6 | 554 | 032 | 286 | 128 | 701 | 997 | 363 | 840 | 615 | 479 |
| 7 | 415 | 779 | 828 | 532 | 397 | 240 | 986 | 663 | 101 | 054 |
| 8 | 686 | 501 | 315 | 497 | 254 | 179 | 040 | 732 | 863 | 928 |
| 9 | 001 | 115 | 679 | 386 | 940 | 854 | 432 | 528 | 797 | 263 |

Square Number 1

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 472 | 138 | 264 | 085 | 793 | 616 | 947 | 821 | 359 | 500 |
| 1 | 385 | 072 | 700 | 921 | 159 | 847 | 416 | 538 | 664 | 293 |
| 2 | 100 | 864 | 672 | 347 | 285 | 959 | 521 | 093 | 716 | 438 |
| 3 | 564 | 621 | 047 | 772 | 916 | 493 | 185 | 300 | 238 | 859 |
| 4 | 059 | 316 | 421 | 193 | 572 | 738 | 200 | 647 | 885 | 964 |
| 5 | 816 | 900 | 559 | 464 | 638 | 272 | 393 | 785 | 021 | 147 |
| 6 | 221 | 759 | 338 | 516 | 447 | 000 | 872 | 164 | 993 | 685 |
| 7 | 693 | 485 | 116 | 259 | 800 | 364 | 038 | 972 | 547 | 721 |
| 8 | 938 | 247 | 893 | 600 | 321 | 585 | 764 | 459 | 172 | 016 |
| 9 | 747 | 593 | 985 | 838 | 064 | 121 | 659 | 216 | 400 | 372 |

Square Number 2

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 190 | 924 | 771 | 313 | 808 | 565 | 289 | 637 | 446 | 052 |
| 1 | 413 | 390 | 852 | 237 | 946 | 689 | 165 | 024 | 571 | 708 |
| 2 | 952 | 671 | 590 | 489 | 713 | 246 | 037 | 308 | 865 | 124 |
| 3 | 071 | 537 | 389 | 890 | 265 | 108 | 913 | 452 | 724 | 646 |
| 4 | 346 | 465 | 137 | 908 | 090 | 824 | 752 | 589 | 613 | 271 |
| 5 | 665 | 252 | 046 | 171 | 524 | 790 | 408 | 813 | 337 | 989 |
| 6 | 737 | 846 | 424 | 065 | 189 | 352 | 690 | 971 | 208 | 513 |
| 7 | 508 | 113 | 965 | 746 | 652 | 471 | 324 | 290 | 089 | 837 |
| 8 | 224 | 789 | 608 | 552 | 437 | 013 | 781 | 146 | 990 | 365 |
| 9 | 889 | 008 | 213 | 624 | 371 | 937 | 546 | 765 | 152 | 490 |

Square Number 3

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 987 | 250 | 823 | 431 | 649 | 002 | 794 | 575 | 118 | 366 |
| 1 | 131 | 487 | 666 | 775 | 218 | 594 | 902 | 350 | 023 | 849 |
| 2 | 266 | 523 | 087 | 194 | 831 | 718 | 375 | 449 | 602 | 950 |
| 3 | 323 | 075 | 494 | 687 | 702 | 949 | 231 | 166 | 850 | 518 |
| 4 | 418 | 102 | 975 | 249 | 387 | 650 | 866 | 094 | 531 | 723 |
| 5 | 502 | 766 | 318 | 923 | 050 | 887 | 149 | 631 | 475 | 294 |
| 6 | 875 | 618 | 150 | 302 | 994 | 466 | 587 | 223 | 749 | 031 |
| 7 | 049 | 931 | 202 | 818 | 566 | 123 | 450 | 787 | 394 | 675 |
| 8 | 750 | 894 | 549 | 066 | 175 | 331 | 623 | 918 | 287 | 402 |
| 9 | 694 | 349 | 731 | 550 | 423 | 275 | 018 | 802 | 966 | 187 |

Square Number 4

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 606 | 541 | 355 | 727 | 434 | 999 | 010 | 162 | 883 | 278 |
| 1 | 827 | 706 | 478 | 062 | 583 | 110 | 699 | 241 | 955 | 334 |
| 2 | 578 | 115 | 906 | 810 | 327 | 083 | 262 | 734 | 499 | 641 |
| 3 | 255 | 962 | 710 | 406 | 099 | 634 | 527 | 878 | 341 | 183 |
| 4 | 783 | 899 | 662 | 534 | 206 | 441 | 378 | 910 | 127 | 055 |
| 5 | 199 | 078 | 283 | 655 | 941 | 306 | 834 | 427 | 762 | 510 |
| 6 | 362 | 483 | 841 | 299 | 610 | 778 | 106 | 555 | 034 | 927 |
| 7 | 934 | 627 | 599 | 383 | 178 | 855 | 741 | 006 | 210 | 462 |
| 8 | 041 | 310 | 134 | 978 | 862 | 227 | 455 | 683 | 506 | 799 |
| 9 | 410 | 234 | 027 | 141 | 755 | 562 | 983 | 399 | 678 | 806 |

Square Number 5

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 525 | 069 | 488 | 842 | 157 | 230 | 376 | 903 | 691 | 714 |
| 1 | 642 | 825 | 114 | 303 | 091 | 976 | 530 | 769 | 288 | 457 |
| 2 | 014 | 988 | 225 | 676 | 442 | 391 | 703 | 857 | 130 | 569 |
| 3 | 788 | 203 | 786 | 125 | 330 | 557 | 042 | 614 | 469 | 991 |
| 4 | 891 | 630 | 503 | 057 | 725 | 169 | 414 | 276 | 942 | 388 |
| 5 | 930 | 314 | 791 | 588 | 269 | 425 | 657 | 142 | 803 | 076 |
| 6 | 403 | 191 | 669 | 730 | 576 | 814 | 925 | 088 | 357 | 242 |
| 7 | 257 | 542 | 030 | 491 | 914 | 688 | 869 | 325 | 776 | 103 |
| 8 | 369 | 476 | 957 | 214 | 603 | 742 | 188 | 591 | 025 | 830 |
| 9 | 176 | 757 | 342 | 969 | 888 | 003 | 291 | 430 | 514 | 625 |

Square Number 6

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 044 | 312 | 136 | 698 | 961 | 777 | 453 | 280 | 505 | 829 |
| 1 | 598 | 644 | 929 | 480 | 305 | 253 | 077 | 812 | 736 | 161 |
| 2 | 329 | 236 | 744 | 553 | 198 | 405 | 880 | 661 | 977 | 012 |
| 3 | 836 | 780 | 653 | 944 | 477 | 061 | 398 | 529 | 112 | 205 |
| 4 | 605 | 577 | 080 | 361 | 844 | 912 | 129 | 753 | 298 | 436 |
| 5 | 277 | 429 | 805 | 036 | 712 | 144 | 561 | 998 | 680 | 353 |
| 6 | 180 | 905 | 512 | 877 | 053 | 629 | 244 | 336 | 461 | 798 |
| 7 | 761 | 098 | 377 | 105 | 229 | 536 | 612 | 444 | 853 | 980 |
| 8 | 412 | 153 | 261 | 729 | 580 | 989 | 936 | 005 | 344 | 677 |
| 9 | 953 | 861 | 498 | 212 | 636 | 380 | 705 | 177 | 029 | 544 |

Square Number 7

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 239 | 773 | 617 | 104 | 582 | 351 | 868 | 096 | 920 | 445 |
| 1 | 904 | 139 | 545 | 986 | 720 | 068 | 251 | 473 | 317 | 682 |
| 2 | 745 | 017 | 339 | 968 | 604 | 820 | 496 | 182 | 551 | 273 |
| 3 | 417 | 396 | 168 | 539 | 851 | 282 | 704 | 945 | 673 | 020 |
| 4 | 120 | 951 | 296 | 782 | 439 | 573 | 645 | 368 | 004 | 817 |
| 5 | 051 | 845 | 420 | 217 | 373 | 639 | 982 | 504 | 196 | 768 |
| 6 | 696 | 520 | 973 | 451 | 268 | 145 | 039 | 717 | 882 | 304 |
| 7 | 382 | 204 | 751 | 620 | 045 | 917 | 173 | 839 | 468 | 596 |
| 8 | 873 | 668 | 082 | 345 | 996 | 404 | 517 | 220 | 739 | 151 |
| 9 | 568 | 482 | 804 | 073 | 117 | 796 | 320 | 651 | 245 | 939 |

Square Number 8

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 311 | 495 | 909 | 556 | 270 | 884 | 122 | 748 | 067 | 633 |
| 1 | 056 | 511 | 233 | 148 | 467 | 722 | 384 | 695 | 809 | 970 |
| 2 | 433 | 709 | 811 | 022 | 956 | 167 | 648 | 570 | 284 | 395 |
| 3 | 609 | 848 | 522 | 211 | 184 | 370 | 456 | 033 | 995 | 767 |
| 4 | 567 | 084 | 348 | 470 | 611 | 295 | 933 | 822 | 756 | 109 |
| 5 | 784 | 133 | 667 | 309 | 895 | 911 | 070 | 256 | 548 | 422 |
| 6 | 948 | 267 | 095 | 684 | 322 | 533 | 711 | 409 | 170 | 856 |
| 7 | 870 | 356 | 484 | 967 | 733 | 009 | 595 | 111 | 622 | 248 |
| 8 | 195 | 922 | 770 | 833 | 048 | 656 | 209 | 367 | 411 | 584 |
| 9 | 222 | 670 | 156 | 795 | 509 | 448 | 867 | 984 | 333 | 011 |

Square Number 9

| | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 |
|---|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|
| 0 | 858 | 607 | 092 | 260 | 326 | 143 | 535 | 419 | 774 | 981 |
| 1 | 760 | 258 | 381 | 519 | 674 | 435 | 843 | 907 | 192 | 026 |
| 2 | 681 | 492 | 158 | 735 | 060 | 574 | 919 | 226 | 343 | 807 |
| 3 | 992 | 119 | 235 | 358 | 543 | 826 | 660 | 781 | 007 | 474 |
| 4 | 274 | 743 | 819 | 626 | 958 | 307 | 081 | 135 | 460 | 592 |
| 5 | 443 | 581 | 974 | 892 | 107 | 058 | 726 | 360 | 219 | 635 |
| 6 | 019 | 374 | 707 | 943 | 835 | 281 | 458 | 692 | 526 | 160 |
| 7 | 126 | 860 | 643 | 074 | 481 | 792 | 207 | 558 | 935 | 319 |
| 8 | 507 | 035 | 426 | 181 | 719 | 960 | 392 | 874 | 658 | 243 |
| 9 | 335 | 926 | 560 | 407 | 292 | 619 | 174 | 043 | 881 | 758 |

REFERENCES

1. Joseph Arkin & E. G. Straus. "Latin k -Cubes." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 12 (1974):288-292.
2. J. Arkin. "A Solution to the Classical Problem of Finding Systems of Three Mutually Orthogonal Numbers in a Cube Formed by Three Superimposed $10 \times 10 \times 10$ Cubes." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 12 (1974):133-140. Also, *Sugaku Seminar* 13 (1974):90-94.
3. R. C. Bose, S. S. Shrikhande, & E. T. Parker. "Further Results on the Construction of Mutually Orthogonal Latin Squares and the Falsity of Euler's Conjecture." *Canadian J. Math.* 12 (1960):189-203.

COMPLEX FIBONACCI NUMBERS

C. J. HARMAN

Mitchell College of Advanced Education, Bathurst N.S.W. 2795, Australia

1. INTRODUCTION

In this note, a new approach is taken toward the significant extension of Fibonacci numbers into the complex plane. Two differing methods for defining such numbers have been considered previously by Horadam [4] and Berzsenyi [2]. It will be seen that the new numbers include Horadam's as a special case, and that they have a symmetry condition which is not satisfied by the numbers considered by Berzsenyi.

The latter defined a set of complex numbers at the Gaussian integers, such that the characteristic Fibonacci recurrence relation is satisfied at any horizontal triple of adjacent points. The numbers to be defined here will have the symmetric condition that the Fibonacci recurrence occurs on any horizontal or vertical triple of adjacent points.

Certain recurrence equations satisfied by the new numbers are outlined, and using them, some interesting new Fibonacci identities are readily obtained. Finally, it is shown that the numbers generalize in a natural manner to higher dimensions.

2. THE COMPLEX FIBONACCI NUMBERS

The numbers, to be denoted by $G(n, m)$, will be defined at the set of Gaussian integers $(n, m) = n + im$, where $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $m \in \mathbb{Z}$. By direct analogy with the classical Fibonacci recurrence

$$F_{n+2} = F_{n+1} + F_n, F_0 = 0, F_1 = 1, \quad (2.1)$$

the numbers $G(n, m)$ will be required to satisfy the following two-dimensional recurrence

$$G(n+2, m) = G(n+1, m) + G(n, m), \quad (2.2)$$

$$G(n, m+2) = G(n, m+1) + G(n, m), \quad (2.3)$$

$$\text{where } G(0, 0) = 0, G(1, 0) = 1, G(0, 1) = i, G(1, 1) = 1 + i. \quad (2.4)$$

The conditions (2.2), (2.3), and (2.4) are sufficient to specify the unique value of $G(n, m)$ at each point (n, m) in the plane, and the actual value of $G(n, m)$ will now be obtained.

From (2.2), the case $m = 0$ gives

$$G(n+2, 0) = G(n+1, 0) + G(n, 0); G(0, 0) = 0, G(1, 0) = 1$$

and hence that

$$G(n, 0) = F_n, \quad (2.5)$$

the classical Fibonacci sequence.

The case $m = 1$ gives the recurrence

$$G(n+2, 1) = G(n+1, 1) + G(n, 1); \quad G(0, 1) = i, \quad G(1, 1) = 1 + i,$$

which is an example of the well-known generalized Fibonacci sequence considered by Horadam [3] that satisfies

$$G(n, 1) = F_{n-1}G(0, 1) + F_nG(1, 1).$$

By substitution

$$G(n, 1) = iF_{n-1} + (1+i)F_n = F_n + i(F_{n-1} + F_n),$$

and so by (2.1)

$$G(n, 1) = F_n + iF_{n+1}. \quad (2.6)$$

Recurrence (2.3) together with initial values (2.5) and (2.6) specify another generalized Fibonacci sequence, so that

$$\begin{aligned} G(n, m) &= F_{m-1}G(n, 0) + F_mG(n, 1) \\ &= F_{m-1}F_n + F_m(F_n + iF_{n+1}) = (F_{m+1} + F_m)F_n + iF_mF_{n+1}, \end{aligned}$$

and so by (2.1) the complex Fibonacci numbers $G(n, m)$ are given by

$$G(n, m) = F_nF_{m-1} + iF_{n+1}F_m. \quad (2.7)$$

It can be noted at once that along the horizontal axis $G(n, 0) = F_n$, and that on the vertical axis $G(0, m) = iF_m$. Also, the special case $n = 1$ corresponds to the complex numbers considered by Horadam [4].

3. RECURRENCE EQUATIONS AND IDENTITIES

Combining (2.2) and (2.3), it follows that

$$G(n+2, m+2) = G(n+1, m+1) + G(n+1, m) + G(n, m+1) + G(n, m), \quad (3.1)$$

which is an interesting two-dimensional version of the Fibonacci recurrence relation and gives the growth-characteristic of the numbers in a diagonal direction: any complex Fibonacci number $G(n, m)$ is the sum of the four previous numbers at the vertices of a square diagonally below and to the left of that number's position on the Gaussian lattice.

From (2.7) and (2.1), it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} G(n+1, m+1) &= F_{n+1}F_{m+2} + iF_{n+2}F_{m+1} \\ &= F_{n+1}(F_{m+1} + F_m) + i(F_{n+1} + F_n)F_{m+1} \\ &= F_{n+1}F_{m+1}(1+i) + F_mF_{n+1} + iF_{m+1}F_n, \end{aligned}$$

and so by (2.7) again, the following recurrence equation is obtained:

$$G(n+1, m+1) = (1+i)F_{n+1}F_{m+1} + G(n, m). \quad (3.2)$$

By repetition of equation (3.2), it follows that

$$G(n+2, m+2) = (1+i)(F_{n+2}F_{m+2} + F_{n+1}F_{m+1}) + G(n, m), \quad (3.3)$$

and by repeated application of (3.2) and (3.3) the following even and odd cases result:

$$G(n+2k, m+2k) = (1+i) \sum_{j=1}^{2k} F_{n+j}F_{m+j} + G(n, m), \quad (3.4)$$

$$G(n + 2k + 1, m + 2k + 1) = (1 + i) \sum_{j=1}^{2k+1} F_{n+j} F_{m+j} + G(m, n). \quad (3.5)$$

From (3.4),
$$\sum_{j=1}^{2k} F_{n+j} F_{m+j} = (1 + i)^{-1} [G(n + 2k, m + 2k) - G(n, m)],$$

and so by (2.7),

$$\sum_{j=1}^{2k} F_{n+j} F_{m+j} = \frac{1}{2} (1 - i) [F_{n+2k} F_{m+2k+1} - F_n F_{m+1} + i F_{n+2k+1} F_{m+2k} - i F_{n+1} F_m],$$

and, equating real and imaginary parts

$$F_{n+2k} F_{m+2k+1} - F_{n+2k+1} F_{m+2k} + F_{n+1} F_m - F_n F_{m+1} = 0, \quad (3.6)$$

and

$$\sum_{j=1}^{2k} F_{n+j} F_{m+j} = \frac{1}{2} [F_{n+2k} F_{m+2k+1} - F_n F_{m+1} + F_{n+2k+1} F_{m+2k} - F_{n+1} F_m]. \quad (3.7)$$

Substitution for $F_{n+2k} F_{m+2k+1}$ from (3.6) into (3.7) gives

$$\sum_{j=1}^{2k} F_{n+j} F_{m+j} = F_{n+2k+1} F_{m+2k} - F_{n+1} F_m. \quad (3.8)$$

Similarly, for the odd case,

$$\sum_{j=1}^{2k+1} F_{n+j} F_{m+j} = F_{n+2k+2} F_{m+2k+1} - F_n F_{m+1}. \quad (3.9)$$

Identities (3.8) and (3.9) unify and generalize certain identities of Berzsenyi [1] and provide interesting examples as special cases. For example, $n = m = 0$ yields the well-known identity:

$$F_1^2 + F_2^2 + \cdots + F_N^2 = F_N F_{N+1}.$$

From (3.8), the case $m = 0, n = 1$ gives

$$F_1 F_2 + F_2 F_3 + \cdots + F_{2k} F_{2k+1} = F_{2k} F_{2k+2},$$

and from (3.9), $n = 0, m = 1$ gives the identity

$$F_1 F_2 + F_2 F_3 + \cdots + F_{2k+1} F_{2k+2} = F_{2k+2}^2.$$

Many other interesting identities can be specified in this way by suitable choice of parameters. For example, equation (3.8) with $m = 0, n = 2$ gives

$$F_1 F_3 + F_2 F_4 + \cdots + F_{2k} F_{2k+2} = F_{2k} F_{2k+3},$$

and for $m = 2, n = 0$, equation (3.9) gives

$$F_1 F_3 + F_2 F_4 + \cdots + F_{2k+1} F_{2k+3} = F_{2k+2} F_{2k+3}.$$

Identity (3.6) has the following counterpart for the case $2k + 1$:

$$F_{n+2k+1} F_{m+2k+2} - F_{n+2k+2} F_{m+2k+1} = F_m F_{n+1} - F_{m+1} F_n, \quad (3.10)$$

and together (3.6) and (3.10) constitute a generalization of some well-known classical identities. For example, if $n = 1, m = 0$, they give

$$F_{N-1} F_{N+1} - F_N^2 = (-1)^N, \quad N \geq 1.$$

As another example, equations (3.6) and (3.10) with $n = 1$ and $m = -2$ yield the identity

$$F_{N-1} F_{N+1} - F_{N-2} F_{N+2} = 2(-1)^N.$$

4. HIGHER DIMENSIONS

The above development of complex Fibonacci numbers naturally extends to higher dimensions and, in order to illustrate, the three-dimensional case will be outlined.

The number $G(\ell, m, n)$ will be required to satisfy

$$G(\ell + 2, m, n) = G(\ell + 1, m, n) + G(\ell, m, n), \quad (4.1)$$

$$G(\ell, m + 2, n) = G(\ell, m + 1, n) + G(\ell, m, n), \quad (4.2)$$

and
$$G(\ell, m, n + 2) = G(\ell, m, n + 1) + G(\ell, m, n), \quad (4.3)$$

where

$$G(0, 0, 0) = (0, 0, 0); G(1, 0, 0) = (1, 0, 0); G(0, 1, 0) = (0, 1, 0);$$

$$G(0, 0, 1) = (0, 0, 1); G(1, 1, 0) = (1, 1, 0); G(1, 0, 1) = (1, 0, 1);$$

$$G(1, 1, 1) = (1, 1, 1).$$

Thus, G has a Fibonacci recurrence in each of the three coordinate directions.

Each of (4.1), (4.2), and (4.3) is a generalized Fibonacci sequence; thus, from (4.1),

$$G(\ell, 0, 0) = F_{\ell-1}(0, 0, 0) + F_{\ell}(1, 0, 0) \quad (4.4)$$

and from (4.1) again,

$$G(\ell, 1, 0) = F_{\ell-1}(0, 1, 0) + F_{\ell}(1, 1, 0). \quad (4.5)$$

From (4.2), it follows that

$$G(\ell, m, 0) = F_{m-1}G(\ell, 0, 0) + F_m G(\ell, 1, 0). \quad (4.6)$$

From (4.1) again

$$G(\ell, 0, 1) = F_{\ell-1}(0, 0, 1) + F_{\ell}(1, 0, 1), \quad (4.7)$$

and
$$G(\ell, 1, 1) = F_{\ell-1}(0, 1, 1) + F_{\ell}(1, 1, 1). \quad (4.8)$$

Equation (4.2) then gives

$$G(\ell, m, 1) = F_{m-1}G(\ell, 0, 1) + F_m G(\ell, 1, 1), \quad (4.9)$$

and from (4.3),

$$G(\ell, m, n) = F_{n-1}G(\ell, m, 0) + F_n G(\ell, m, 1). \quad (4.10)$$

Combining equations (4.4)-(4.10), and using the classical Fibonacci recurrence to reduce the expressions obtained, one finally gets

$$G(\ell, m, n) = (F_{\ell} F_{m+1} F_{n+1}, F_{\ell+1} F_m F_{n+1}, F_{\ell+1} F_{m+1} F_n),$$

which is the three-dimensional version of Fibonacci numbers. This form readily generalizes to higher dimensions in the obvious fashion.

It is interesting to note that if (4.1), (4.2), and (4.3) are combined directly, then it follows that the value of $G(\ell + 2, m + 2, n + 2)$ is given by the sum of the values of G at the eight vertices of the cube diagonally below that point—a generalization of (3.1).

The structure provided by the complex Fibonacci numbers was seen in Section 3 to result in some interesting classical identities involving products. It is conjectured that the above three-dimensional numbers may lead to identities involving triple products.

REFERENCES

1. G. Berzsenyi. "Sums of Products of Generalized Fibonacci Numbers." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 13 (1975):343-344.
2. G. Berzsenyi. "Gaussian Fibonacci Numbers." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 15 (1977):233-236.
3. A. F. Horadam. "A Generalized Fibonacci Sequence." *American Math. Monthly* 68 (1961):455-459.
4. A. F. Horadam. "Complex Fibonacci Numbers and Fibonacci Quaternions." *American Math. Monthly* 70 (1963):289-291.

THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION

PROUDLY ANNOUNCES

THE

PUBLICATION OF

A COLLECTION OF MANUSCRIPTS RELATED TO THE FIBONACCI SEQUENCE

18TH ANNIVERSARY VOLUME

Edited by

VERNER E. HOGGATT, JR.

and

MARJORIE BICKNELL-JOHNSON

This volume, in celebration of the 18th anniversary of the founding of The Fibonacci Association, contains a collection of manuscripts, published here for the first time, that reflect research efforts of an international range of mathematicians. This 234-page volume is now available for \$20.00* a copy, postage and handling included. Please make checks payable to The Fibonacci Association, and send your requests to The Fibonacci Association, University of Santa Clara, Santa Clara, California 95053.

*For areas within domestic U.S. mail limits. Please write for applicable rates to areas outside the U.S.

ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

Edited by
A. P. HILLMAN

University of New Mexico, Albuquerque, NM 87131

Please send all communications regarding *ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS* to PROFESSOR A. P. HILLMAN, 709 Solano Dr., S.E., Albuquerque, NM 87108. Each solution or problem should be on a separate sheet (or sheets). Preference will be given to those typed with double spacing in the format used below. Solutions should be received within four months of the publication date.

DEFINITIONS

The Fibonacci numbers F_n and Lucas numbers L_n satisfy

$$F_{n+2} = F_{n+1} + F_n, F_0 = 0, F_1 = 1$$

and

$$L_{n+2} = L_{n+1} + L_n, L_0 = 2, L_1 = 1.$$

Also, α and β designate the roots $(1 + \sqrt{5})/2$ and $(1 - \sqrt{5})/2$, respectively, of $x^2 - x - 1 = 0$.

PROBLEMS PROPOSED IN THIS ISSUE

B-442 Proposed by P. L. Mana, Albuquerque, NM

The identity

$$2 \cos^2 \theta = 1 + \cos(2\theta)$$

leads to the identity

$$8 \cos^4 \theta = 3 + 4 \cos(2\theta) + \cos(4\theta).$$

Are there corresponding identities on Lucas numbers?

B-443 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA

For all integers n and w with w odd, establish the following

$$L_{n+2w}L_{n+w} - 2L_wL_{n+w}L_{n-w} - L_{n-w}L_{n-2w} = L_n^2(L_{3w} - 2L_w).$$

B-444 Proposed by Herta T. Freitag, Roanoke, VA

In base 10, the palindromes (that is, numbers reading the same forward or backward) 12321 and 112232211 are converted into new palindromes using

$$\begin{aligned} 99[10^3 + 9(12321)] &= 11077011, \\ 99[10^5 + 9(112232211)] &= 100008800001. \end{aligned}$$

Generalize on these to obtain a method or methods for converting certain palindromes in a general base b to other palindromes in base b .

B-445 Proposed by Wray G. Brady, Slippery Rock State College, PA

Show that

$$5F_{2n+2}^2 + 2L_{2n}^2 + 5F_{2n-2}^2 = L_{2n+2}^2 + 10F_{2n}^2 + L_{2n-2}^2$$

and find a simpler form for these equal expressions.

B-446 Proposed by Jerry M. Metzger, University of N. Dakota, Grand Forks, ND

It is familiar that a positive integer n is divisible by 3 if and only if the sum of its digits is divisible by 3. The same is true for 9. For 27, this

is false since, for example, 27 divides $1 + 8 + 9 + 9$ but does not divide 1899. However, $27 \nmid 1998$.

Prove that 27 divides the sum of the digits of n if and only if 27 divides one of the integers formed by permuting the digits of n .

B-447 Based on the previous proposal by Jerry M. Metzger.

Is there an analogue of B-446 in base 5?

SOLUTIONS

Consequence of the Euler-Fermat Theorem

B-418 Proposed by Herta T. Freitag, Roanoke, VA

Prove or disprove that $n^{15} - n^3$ is an integral multiple of $2^{15} - 2^3$ for all integers n .

Solution by Lawrence Somer, Washington, D.C.

The assertion is correct. First, note that

$$n^{15} - n^3 = n^3(n^{12} - 1).$$

Further,

$$2^{15} - 2^3 = 2^3(2^6 - 1)(2^6 + 1) = 8(9)(7)(5)(13).$$

By Euler's generalization of Fermat's theorem,

$$a^{\phi(n)} \equiv 1 \pmod{n}$$

if $(a, n) = 1$, where ϕ is Euler's totient function. It follows that $a^{k\phi(d)} \equiv 1 \pmod{d}$ for integral k . Now

$$\phi(8) = 4, \phi(9) = 6, \phi(7) = 6, \phi(5) = 4, \text{ and } \phi(13) = 12.$$

Thus, it follows in each instance that if $(n, d) = 1$, where $d = 8, 9, 7, 5$, or 13 , then $n^{12} - 1 \equiv 0 \pmod{d}$, since $\phi(d) \mid 12$ for each d . Further, if $(n, d) \neq 1$ for $d = 8, 9, 7, 5$, or 13 , then $d \mid n^3$, since $d \mid p^3$ for some prime p . Since $(8, 9, 7, 5, 13) = 1$, it now follows that

$$n^3(n^{12} - 1) \equiv 0 \pmod{8 \cdot 9 \cdot 7 \cdot 5 \cdot 13}.$$

Thus, $2^{15} - 2^3$ divides $n^{15} - n^3$.

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, Duane A. Cooper, M. J. DeLeon, Robert M. Giuli, Bob Prielipp, C. B. Shields, Sahib Singh, Gregory Wulczyn, and the proposer.

NOTE: DeLeon generalized to show that for $k \in \{2, 3, 4\}$, $2^k(2^{12} - 1)$ divides $n^k(n^{12} - 1)$ for all positive integers n .

Symmetric Congruence

B-419 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA

For i in $\{1, 2, 3, 4\}$, establish a congruence

$$F_n L_{5k+i} \equiv a_i n L_n F_{5k+i} \pmod{5}$$

with each a_i in $\{1, 2, 3, 4\}$.

Solution by Sahib Singh, Clarion State College, Clarion, PA

We know that $n L_n \equiv F_n \pmod{5}$. (See the solution to Problem B-368 in the December 1978 issue.) Thus

$$F_n = n L_n \pmod{5}, \tag{1}$$

$$\text{and } (5k+i) L_{5k+i} \equiv F_{5k+i} \pmod{5} \text{ or } L_{5k+i} \equiv (i)^{-1} F_{5k+i} \pmod{5}. \tag{2}$$

Multiply (1) and (2) to get

$$F_n L_{5k+i} \equiv (i)^{-1} n L_n F_{5k+i} \pmod{5}.$$

Thus, $a_i = (i)^{-1}$ where $(i)^{-1}$ is the multiplicative inverse of i in Z_5 . Therefore, $a_1 = 1$, $a_2 = 3$, $a_3 = 2$, and $a_4 = 4$.

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, M. J. DeLeon, Bob Prielipp, and the proposer.

Finding Fibonacci Factors

B-420 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA

Let

$$g(n, k) = F_{n+10k}^4 + F_n^4 - (L_{4k} + 1)(F_{n+8k}^4 + F_{n+2k}^4) + L_{4k}(F_{n+6k}^4 + F_{n+4k}^4).$$

Can one express $g(n, k)$ in the form $L_r F_s F_t F_u F_v$ with each of r, s, t, u , and v linear in n and k ?

Solution by Bob Prielipp, University of Wisconsin-Oshkosh, WI

The answer to the question stated above is "yes."

On pp. 376-377 of the December 1979 issue (see solution to Problem H-279) Paul Bruckman established that

$$F_{n+6k}^4 - (L_{4k} + 1)(F_{n+4k}^4 - F_{n+2k}^4) - F_n^4 = F_{2k} F_{4k} F_{6k} F_{4n+12k}.$$

Substituting $n + 4k$ for n yields

$$F_{n+10k}^4 - (L_{4k} + 1)(F_{n+8k}^4 - F_{n+6k}^4) - F_{n+4k}^4 = F_{2k} F_{4k} F_{6k} F_{4n+28k}.$$

Thus, $g(n, k) =$

$$\begin{aligned} & [F_{n+10k}^4 - (L_{4k} + 1)(F_{n+8k}^4 - F_{n+6k}^4) - F_{n+4k}^4] \\ & - [F_{n+6k}^4 - (L_{4k} + 1)(F_{n+4k}^4 - F_{n+2k}^4) - F_n^4] \\ & = F_{2k} F_{4k} F_{6k} F_{4n+28k} - F_{2k} F_{4k} F_{6k} F_{4n+12k} \\ & = F_{2k} F_{4k} F_{6k} [F_{(4n+20k)+8k} - F_{(4n+20k)-8k}] \\ & = F_{2k} F_{4k} F_{6k} F_{8k} L_{4n+20k}, \end{aligned}$$

because $F_{s+t} - F_{s-t} = F_t L_s$, t even (see p. 115 of the April 1975 issue of this journal).

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman and the proposer.

Unique Representation

B-421 Proposed by V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., San Jose State University, San Jose, CA

Let $\{u_n\}$ be defined by the recursion $u_{n+3} = u_{n+2} + u_n$ and the initial conditions $u_1 = 1$, $u_2 = 2$, and $u_3 = 3$. Prove that every positive integer N has a unique representation

$$N = \sum_{i=1}^n c_i u_i,$$

with $c_n = 1$, each $c_i \in \{0, 1\}$, $c_i c_{i+1} = 0 = c_i c_{i+2}$ if $1 \leq i \leq n-2$.

Solution by Paul S. Bruckman, Concord, CA

We first observe that the condition " $c_i c_{i+1} = 0 = c_i c_{i+2}$ for $1 \leq i \leq n-2$ " should be replaced by

$$c_i c_{i+1} = 0 \text{ for } 1 \leq i \leq n-1 \text{ and } c_i c_{i+2} = 0 \text{ for } 1 \leq i \leq n-2. \quad (1)$$

Let $U = (u_n)_{n=1}^{\infty}$. We call a representation $(N)_U \equiv c_n c_{n-1} \dots c_1$ of N a U -nary representation of N if

$$N = \sum_{i=1}^n c_i u_i,$$

with the c_i 's satisfying the given conditions, as modified by (1). It is not assumed a priori that such a representation is necessarily unique. In any U -nary representation of N , any two consecutive "1's" appearing must be separated by at least two zeros. Without the modification given in (1), the representations are certainly not unique; examples:

$$(3)_U = 100 = 11 \quad \text{and} \quad (11)_U = 11001 = 100010,$$

ignoring (1) and substituting the given condition of the published problem. We require a pair of preliminary lemmas.

Lemma 1:

$$\sum_{k=0}^m u_{n-3k-1} = u_n - 1, \quad (n = 2, 3, 4, \dots), \quad \text{where } m = \left\lfloor \frac{n-2}{3} \right\rfloor. \quad (2)$$

Proof: Using the recursion satisfied by the u_n 's,

$$\sum_{k=0}^m u_{n-3k-1} = \sum_{k=0}^m (u_{n-3k} - u_{n-3k-3}) = \sum_{k=0}^m u_{n-3k} - \sum_{k=1}^{m+1} u_{n-3k} = u_n - u_{n-3m-3}.$$

Note that $n - 3m - 3 = -1, 0$, or 1 for all n . We may extend the sequence U to nonpositive indices k of u_k by using the initial values and the recursion satisfied by the elements of U ; we then obtain:

$$u_{-1} = u_0 = u_1 = 1.$$

This establishes the lemma.

Lemma 2: If $(u_n)_U = c_m c_{m-1} \dots c_1$, then $m = n$ and $c_i = \delta_{ni}$ (Kronecker delta).

Proof: By definition,

$$c_m = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad u_n = \sum_{i=1}^m c_i u_i.$$

Since $u_n \geq u_m$, thus $m \leq n$. On the other hand, since any two consecutive "1's" in a U -nary representation are separated by at least two zeros, it follows that

$$u_n \leq \sum_{i=0}^h u_{m-3k}, \quad \text{where } h = \left\lfloor \frac{m-1}{3} \right\rfloor.$$

Substituting $n = m + 1$ in Lemma 1, it follows that $u_n \leq u_{m+1} - 1$, or $u_n < u_{m+1}$. Since $u_m \leq u_n < u_{m+1}$, it follows that $m = n$. Hence $c_n = 1$, from which it follows that the remaining c_i 's vanish. Q.E.D.

Now, define S to be the set of all positive integers N that have a *unique* U -nary representation. We will find it convenient to extend S to include the number zero. Note that zero certainly satisfies all the conditions of " U -naryness," *except* for $c_n = 1$; for this exceptional element of S only, we waive this condition. Note that $u_k = k \in S$, $k = 1, 2, 3, 4$.

We seek to establish that S consists of all nonnegative integers, and our proof is by induction on k . Assume that $K \in S$, $0 \leq K < u_k$, where $k \geq 4$. In particular, $M \in S$, where $0 \leq M < u_{k-2}$. Then $(M)_U = c_r c_{r-1} \dots c_1$, for some r , where $c_r = 1$. Since $M < u_{k-2}$, thus $r \leq k - 3$; otherwise, $r \geq k - 2$, which implies $M \geq u_{k-2}$, a contradiction. Let

$$N = M + u_k. \quad (3)$$

Then

$$N = \sum_{i=1}^k c_i u_i, \text{ with } c_k = 1, c_i = 0, \text{ if } r < i < k.$$

Since $r \leq k-3$, we see that the foregoing expression yields a U -nary representation of N , namely $(N)_U = c_k c_{k-1} \dots c_1$, though not necessarily unique. Suppose that $(N)_U = d_t d_{t-1} \dots d_1$ is another U -nary representation of $N = M + u_k$. Then (since $M \in S$) $d_i = c_i$, $1 \leq i \leq r$. Moreover, $u_k = N - M$ has a unique U -nary representation, by Lemma 2; hence, $t = k$, which implies that $N \in S$.

Since $0 \leq M < u_{k-2}$, thus $u_k \leq N < u_{k-2} + u_k = u_{k+1}$. The inductive step is:

$$S \supset \{0, 1, 2, \dots, u^k - 1\} \Rightarrow S \supset \{0, 1, 2, \dots, u_{k+1} - 1\}.$$

By induction, S consists of all nonnegative integers. Q.E.D.

Also solved by Sahib Singh and the proposer.

Lexicographic Ordering of Coefficients

B-422 Proposed by V.E. Hoggatt, Jr., San Jose State University, San Jose, CA

With representations as in B-421, let

$$N = \sum_{i=1}^n c_i u_i, \quad N+1 = \sum_{i=1}^m d_i u_i.$$

Show that $m \geq n$ and that if $m = n$ then $d_k > c_k$ for the largest k with $c_k \neq d_k$.

Solution by Paul S. Bruckman, Concord, CA

We refer to the notation and solution of B-421 above. Given

$$(N)_U = c_n c_{n-1} \dots c_1 \quad \text{and} \quad (N+1)_U = d_m d_{m-1} \dots d_1,$$

which we now know are the unique U -nary representations of N and $N+1$, respectively.

Since $u_n \leq N < u_{n+1}$ and $u_m \leq N+1 < u_{m+1}$, thus $u_m - u_{n+1} < 1 < u_{m+1} - u_n$. Now $u_{m+1} > u_n + 1 > u_n \Rightarrow m+1 > n$, since U is an increasing sequence. On the other hand, $u_m < u_{n+1} + 1 \leq u_{n+2} \Rightarrow m < n+2$. Hence,

$$m = n \quad \text{or} \quad m = n+1. \quad (1)$$

Note that (1) is somewhat stronger than the desired result: $m \geq n$.

Now, suppose $m = n$, and let k be the largest integer i such that $c_i \neq d_i$. Then $c_i = d_i$, $k < i \leq n$. Hence,

$$\sum_{i=k+1}^n c_i u_i = \sum_{i=k+1}^n d_i u_i.$$

This, in turn, implies

$$N - \sum_{i=k+1}^n c_i u_i = N+1 - 1 - \sum_{i=k+1}^n d_i u_i,$$

or

$$1 + \sum_{i=1}^k c_i u_i = \sum_{i=1}^k d_i u_i.$$

Suppose $c_k = 1$, $d_k = 0$. Then the left member of (2) is $\geq 1 + u_k$. On the other hand, the right member of (2) is

$$\leq \sum_{i=0}^p u_{k-1-3i} = u_k - 1, \text{ where } p = \left\lfloor \frac{k-2}{3} \right\rfloor,$$

using the properties of the U -nary representation and Lemma 1 of the solution to B-421. This contradiction establishes the only remaining possibility, i.e., $c_k = 0$, $d_k = 1$. This establishes the desired result.

Also solved by Sahib Singh and the proposer.

Telescoping Infinite Product

B-423 Proposed by Jeffery Shallit, Palo Alto, CA

Here let F_n be denoted by $F(n)$. Evaluate the infinite product

$$\left(1 + \frac{1}{2}\right)\left(1 + \frac{1}{13}\right)\left(1 + \frac{1}{610}\right) \cdots = \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left[1 + \frac{1}{F(2^{n+1} - 1)}\right].$$

Solution by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA

Let L_n also be written as $L(n)$ and $A_n = 1 + [1/F(2^{n+1} - 1)]$. It is easily seen (for example, from the Binet formulas) that

$$L(2)L(4)L(8) \cdots L(2^n) = F(2^{n+1}) \quad \text{and} \quad 1 + F(2^{n+1} - 1) = F(2^n - 1)L(2^n).$$

Hence, $A_n = F(2^n - 1)L(2^n)/F(2^{n+1} - 1)$ and

$$\begin{aligned} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} A_i &= \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{F(1)F(3)F(7)F(15) \cdots F(2^n - 1)L(2)L(4)L(8) \cdots L(2^n)}{F(3)F(7)F(15) \cdots F(2^{n+1} - 1)} \\ &= \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{F(2^{n+1})}{F(2^{n+1} - 1)}, \end{aligned}$$

and the desired limit is $\alpha = (1 + \sqrt{5})/2$.

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, Bob Prielipp, and the proposer.

(Continued from page 6)

Hence

$$u_{n-1} = x_1 u_n - Dy_1 v_n = (x_1 - 1)u_n - Dy_1 v_n + u_n \geq u_n.$$

Thus $n = 0$.

REFERENCES

1. M. J. DeLeon. "Pell's Equation and Pell Number Triples." *The Fibonacci Quarterly* 14 (Dec. 1976):456-460.
2. Trygve Nagell. *Introduction to Number Theory*. New York: Chelsea, 1964.

ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

Edited by

RAYMOND E. WHITNEY

Lock Haven State College, Lock Haven, PA 17745

Please send all communications concerning ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS to RAYMOND E. WHITNEY, Mathematics Department, Lock Haven State College, Lock Haven, PA 17745. This department especially welcomes problems believed to be new or extending old results. Proposers should submit solutions or other information that will assist the editor. To facilitate their consideration, the solutions should be submitted on separate signed sheets within two months after publication of the problems.

PROBLEMS PROPOSED IN THIS ISSUE

H-322 Proposed by Andreas N. Philippou, American Univ. of Beirut, Lebanon

For each fixed integer $k \geq 2$, define the k -Fibonacci sequence $f_n^{(k)}$ by

$$f_0^{(k)} = 0, f_1^{(k)} = 1, \text{ and } f_n^{(k)} = \begin{cases} f_{n-1}^{(k)} + \cdots + f_0^{(k)} & \text{if } 2 \leq n \leq k \\ f_{n-1}^{(k)} + \cdots + f_{n-k}^{(k)} & \text{if } n \geq k+1. \end{cases}$$

Show the following:

- (a) $f_n^{(k)} = 2^{n-2}$ if $2 \leq n \leq k+1$;
- (b) $f_n^{(k)} < 2^{n-2}$ if $n \geq k+2$;
- (c) $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (f_n^{(k)} / 2^n) = 2^{k-1}$.

H-323 Proposed by Paul Bruckman, Concord, CA

Let $(x_n)_0^{\infty}$ and $(y_n)_0^{\infty}$ be two sequences satisfying the common recurrence

$$p(E)x_n = 0, \quad (1)$$

where p is a monic polynomial of degree 2 and $E = 1 + \Delta$ is the unit right-shift operator of finite difference theory. Show that

$$x_n y_{n+1} - x_{n+1} y_n = (p(0))^n (x_0 y_1 - x_1 y_0), \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots \quad (2)$$

Generalize to the case where p is of degree $e \geq 1$.

H-324 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA

Establish the identity

$$\begin{aligned} A &\equiv F_{14r} (F_{n+14r}^7 + F_n^7) - 7F_{10r} (F_{n+4r}^6 F_n + F_{n+4r} F_n^6) \\ &\quad + 21F_{6r} (F_{n+4r}^5 F_n^2 + F_{n+4r}^2 F_n^5) - 35F_{2r} (F_{n+4r}^4 F_n^3 + F_{n+4r}^3 F_n^4) \\ &= F_{4r}^7 F_{7n+14}. \end{aligned}$$

H-325 Proposed by Leonard Carlitz, Duke University, Durham, NC

For arbitrary a, b put

$$S_m(a, b) = \sum_{j+k=m} \binom{a}{j} \binom{b+k-1}{k} \quad (m = 0, 1, 2, \dots).$$

Show that

$$\sum_{m+n=p} S_m(a, b) S_n(c, d) = S_p(a+c, b+d) \quad (1)$$

$$\sum_{m+n=p} (-1)^n S_m(a, b) S_n(c, d) = S_p(a-d, b-c). \quad (2)$$

H-326 Proposed by Larry Taylor, Briarwood, NY

(A) If $p \equiv 7$ or $31 \pmod{36}$ is prime and $(p-1)/6$ is also prime, prove that $32(1 \pm \sqrt{-3})$ is a primitive root of p .

(B) If $p \equiv 13$ or $61 \pmod{72}$ is prime and $(p-1)/12$ is also prime, prove that $32(\sqrt{-1} \pm \sqrt{3})$ is a primitive root of p .

For example:

$11 \equiv \sqrt{-3} \pmod{31}$, 12 and 21 are primitive roots of 31;

$11 \equiv \sqrt{-1} \pmod{61}$, $8 \equiv \sqrt{3} \pmod{61}$, 59 and 35 are primitive roots of 61.

SOLUTIONS

Vandermonde

H-299 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA
(Vol. 17, No. 2, April 1979)

$$\begin{aligned} \text{(A)} \quad \text{Evaluate } \Delta &= \begin{vmatrix} F_{2r} & F_{6r} & F_{10r} & F_{14r} & F_{18r} \\ F_{4r} & F_{12r} & F_{20r} & F_{28r} & F_{36r} \\ F_{6r} & F_{18r} & F_{30r} & F_{42r} & F_{54r} \\ F_{8r} & F_{28r} & F_{40r} & F_{56r} & F_{72r} \\ F_{10r} & F_{30r} & F_{50r} & F_{70r} & F_{90r} \end{vmatrix} \\ \text{(B)} \quad \text{Evaluate } D &= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & L_{2r+1} & L_{4r+2} & L_{6r+3} & L_{8r+4} \\ 1 & -L_{6r+3} & L_{12r+6} & L_{18r+9} & L_{24r+12} \\ 1 & L_{10r+5} & L_{20r+10} & L_{30r+15} & L_{40r+20} \\ 1 & -L_{14r+7} & L_{28r+14} & -L_{42r+21} & L_{56r+28} \\ 1 & L_{18r+9} & L_{36r+18} & L_{54r+27} & L_{72r+36} \end{vmatrix} \\ \text{(C)} \quad \text{Evaluate } D_1 &= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & L_{2r} & L_{4r} & L_{6r} & L_{8r} \\ 1 & L_{6r} & L_{12r} & L_{18r} & L_{24r} \\ 1 & L_{10r} & L_{20r} & L_{30r} & L_{40r} \\ 1 & L_{18r} & L_{36r} & L_{54r} & L_{72r} \end{vmatrix} \end{aligned}$$

Solution by the proposer

(A) Taking out the common column factors

F_{2r} , F_{6r} , F_{10r} , F_{14r} , and F_{18r}

and simplifying, we obtain:

$$\Delta = F_{2r} F_{6r} F_{10r} F_{14r} F_{18r} \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ L_{2r} & L_{6r} & L_{10r} & L_{14r} & L_{18r} \\ L_{4r} & L_{12r} & L_{20r} & L_{28r} & L_{36r} \\ L_{6r} & L_{18r} & L_{30r} & L_{42r} & L_{56r} \\ L_{8r} & L_{24r} & L_{40r} & L_{56r} & L_{72r} \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= F_{2r} F_{6r} F_{10r} F_{14r} F_{18r} (L_{6r} - L_{2r})(L_{10r} - L_{2r})(L_{14r} - L_{2r})(L_{18r} - L_{2r})$$

$$(L_{10r} - L_{6r})(L_{14r} - L_{6r})(L_{18r} - L_{6r})$$

$$(L_{14r} - L_{10r})(L_{18r} - L_{10r})$$

$$(L_{18r} - L_{14r})$$

$$= 5^{10} F_{2r} F_{6r} F_{10r} F_{14r} F_{18r} F_{2r}^4 F_{4r}^4 F_{6r}^3 F_{8r}^3 F_{10r}^2 F_{12r}^2 F_{14r} F_{16r}$$

$$= 5^{10} F_{2r}^5 F_{4r}^4 F_{6r}^4 F_{8r}^3 F_{10r}^2 F_{12r}^2 F_{14r} F_{16r} F_{18r}.$$

(B) The solution is as follows:

- (1) $L_{6r+3} + L_{2r+1} = 5F_{4r+2} F_{2r+1} \dots$ (5) $L_{14r+7} - L_{6r+3} = 5F_{10r+5} F_{4r+2}$
 (2) $L_{12r+6} + L_{4r+2} = 5F_{8r+4} F_{4r+2} \dots$ (6) $L_{28r+14} - L_{12r+6} = 5F_{20r+10} F_{8r+4}$
 (3) $L_{18r+9} + L_{6r+3} = 5F_{12r+6} F_{6r+3} \dots$ (7) $L_{42r+21} - L_{18r+9} = 5F_{30r+15} F_{12r+6}$
 (4) $L_{24r+12} + L_{8r+4} = 5F_{16r+8} F_{8r+4} \dots$ (8) $L_{56r+27} - L_{24r+12} = 5F_{40r+20} F_{16r+8}$
 (1) divides (2), (3), (4), ... (5) divides (6), (7), (8).

$$D = (L_{6r+3} + L_{2r+1})(L_{10r+5} - L_{2r+1})(L_{14r+7} + L_{2r+1})(L_{18r+9} - L_{2r+1})$$

$$(L_{10r+5} + L_{6r+3})(L_{14r+7} - L_{6r+3})(L_{18r+9} + L_{6r+3})$$

$$(L_{14r+7} + L_{10r+5})(L_{18r+9} - L_{10r+5})$$

$$(L_{18r+9} + L_{14r+7})$$

$$= 5^{10} F_{2r+1}^4 F_{4r+2}^4 F_{6r+3}^3 F_{8r+4}^3 F_{10r+5}^2 F_{12r+6}^2 F_{14r+7} F_{16r+8}.$$

(C) The solution is as follows:

$$(1) \quad L_{r(4t+2)} - L_{r(4s+2)} = 5F_{r(2s+2t+2)} F_{r(2t-2s)} \quad (3)$$

$$(2) \quad L_{rk(4t+2)} - L_{rk(4s+2)} = 5F_{rk(2s+2t+2)} F_{rk(2t-2s)} \quad (4)$$

Since (3) divides (4), (1) divides (2). Checking for proper degree and sign, the sum of the subscripts in the main diagonal, we have

$$D_1 = (L_{6r} - L_{2r})(L_{10r} - L_{2r})(L_{14r} - L_{2r})(L_{18r} - L_{2r})$$

$$(L_{10r} - L_{6r})(L_{14r} - L_{6r})(L_{18r} - L_{6r})$$

$$(L_{14r} - L_{10r})(L_{18r} - L_{10r})$$

$$(L_{18r} - L_{14r})$$

$$\text{or } D_1 = 5^{10} F_{2r}^4 F_{4r}^4 F_{6r}^3 F_{8r}^3 F_{10r}^2 F_{12r}^2 F_{14r} F_{16r}.$$

Sum Difference

H-301 Proposed by V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., San Jose State University, San Jose, CA
 (Vol. 17, No. 2, April 1979)

Let $A_0, A_1, A_2, \dots, A_n, \dots$ be a sequence such that the n th differences are zero (that is, the diagonal sequence terminates). Show that, if

$$A(x) = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} A_i x^i,$$

then

$$A(x) = 1/(1-x)D(x/(1-x)),$$

where

$$D(x) = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} d_i x^i.$$

Solution by Paul Bruckman, Concord, CA

It is assumed that the d_i 's, which are not explicitly defined, are in fact, defined as $d_i \equiv \Delta^i A_0$. Then,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{(1-x)} D\left(\frac{x}{(1-x)}\right) &= \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} d_i x^i (1-x)^{-i-1} = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} d_i x^i \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \binom{-i-1}{k} (-x)^k \\ &= \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} d_i \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \binom{i+k}{i} x^{i+k} = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} d_i \sum_{k=i}^{\infty} \binom{k}{i} x^k \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} x^k \sum_{i=0}^k \binom{k}{i} d_i = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} x^k \sum_{i=0}^k \binom{k}{i} \Delta^i A_0 \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} x^k (1+\Delta)^k A_0 = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} x^k E^k A_0 \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} A_k x^k = A(x). \quad \text{Q.E.D.} \end{aligned}$$

SUSTAINING MEMBERS

I.L. Alder
I. Arkin
Leon Bankoff
Murray Berg
J.G. Bergart
J. Bergum
George Berzsenyi
M. Bicknell-Johnson
Clyde Bridger
J.L. Brown, Jr.
P.S. Bruckman
P.F. Byrd
L. Carlitz
G.D. Chakerian
R.M. Chamberlain, Jr.
P.J. Cocuzza
Commodity Advisory
Corp. of Texas
J.W. Creely
P.A. DeCaux
M.J. DeLeon

James Desmond
Harvey Diehl
G.L. Douglass, II
J.L. Ercolano
D.R. Farmer
F.F. Frey, Jr.
C.L. Gardner
R.M. Giuli
*H.W. Gould
W.E. Greig
V.C. Harris
A.P. Hillman
*A.F. Horadam
R.J. Howell
Juan Ituarte
R.P. Kelisky
C.H. Kimberling
H.T. Leonard
*C.T. Long
*James Maxwell
R.K. McConnell, Jr.

*Sr. M. DeSales McNabb
Leslie Miller
M.G. Monzingo
F.J. Ossiander
E.D. Robinson
F.G. Rothwell
J.A. Schumaker
D. Singmaster
John Sjoberg
C.C. Styles
M.N.S. Swamy
L. Taylor
*D. Thoro
H.L. Umansky
R. Vogel
Marcellus Waddill
*L.A. Walker
J.E. Walton
R.E. Whitney
E.L. Yang

Charter Members

INSTITUTIONAL MEMBERS

THE BAKER STORE EQUIPMENT
COMPANY
Cleveland, Ohio

CALIFORNIA STATE POLY UNIVERSITY,
POMONA
Pomona, California

CALIFORNIA STATE UNIVERSITY,
SACRAMENTO
Sacramento, California

INDIANA UNIVERSITY
Bloomington, Indiana

ORION ENTERPRISES
Cicero, Illinois

REED COLLEGE
Portland, Oregon

SAN JOSE STATE UNIVERSITY
San Jose, California

SCIENTIFIC ENGINEERING
INSTRUMENTS, INC.
Sparks, Nevada

SONOMA STATE UNIVERSITY
Rohnert Park, California

TRI STATE UNIVERSITY
Angola, Indiana

UNIVERSITY OF SANTA CLARA
Santa Clara, California

UNIVERSITY OF SCRANTON
Scranton, Pennsylvania

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
Toronto, Canada

WASHINGTON STATE UNIVERSITY
Pullman, Washington

JOVE STATISTICAL TYPING SERVICE

2088 Orestes Way
CAMPBELL, CALIFORNIA 95008

BOOKS AVAILABLE THROUGH THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION

| Title | Price* |
|---|---------|
| INTRODUCTION TO FIBONACCI DISCOVERY by Brother Alfred Brousseau. Fibonacci Association (FA), 1965 | \$ 2.25 |
| A PRIMER FOR THE FIBONACCI NUMBERS. Edited by Marjorie Bicknell & Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. FA, 1972 | 15.00 |
| FIBONACCI AND LUCAS NUMBERS by Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. FA, 1969 | 5.00 |
| LINEAR RECURSION AND FIBONACCI SEQUENCES by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1971 | 2.25 |
| FIBONACCI'S PROBLEM BOOK. Edited by Marjorie Bicknell & Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. FA, 1974 | 8.50 |
| FIBONACCI AND RELATED NUMBER THEORETIC TABLES. Edited by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1972 | 14.00 |
| NUMBER THEORY TABLES. Edited by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1973 | 18.75 |
| THE THEORY OF SIMPLY PERIODIC NUMERICAL FUNCTIONS by Edouard Lucas. Translated from the French by Sidney Kravitz, edited by Douglas Lind. FA, 1969 | 6.00 |
| RECURRING SEQUENCES by Dov Jarden. Third, enlarged edition. Riveon Lematematika, Israel, 1973 | 10.00 |
| TABLES OF FIBONACCI ENTRY POINTS (Part I). Edited and annotated by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1965 | 3.00 |
| TABLES OF FIBONACCI ENTRY POINTS (Part II). Edited and annotated by Brother Alfred Brousseau. FA, 1965 | 2.50 |
| A COLLECTION OF MANUSCRIPTS RELATED TO THE FIBONACCI SEQUENCE: 18TH ANNIVERSARY VOLUME. Edited by Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr., & Marjorie Bicknell-Johnson | 20.00 |

 *Prices, subject to change, include postage and handling for areas within U.S. domestic mail limits and for surface mail to international addresses. Please write for airmail postage rates to international addresses.

Send your orders to The Fibonacci Association, University of Santa Clara, Santa Clara CA 95053, U.S.A. Please make check or money order payable to The Fibonacci Association. All fees are quoted in U.S. currency rates.

Effective August 1, 1980